

SACRIFICE, CURSE, AND THE COVENANT
IN PAUL'S SOTERIOLOGY

Norio Yamaguchi

A Thesis Submitted for the Degree of PhD
at the
University of St Andrews



2015

Full metadata for this item is available in
St Andrews Research Repository
at:

<http://research-repository.st-andrews.ac.uk/>

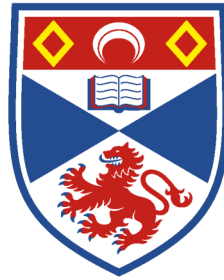
Please use this identifier to cite or link to this item:

<http://hdl.handle.net/10023/7419>

This item is protected by original copyright

Sacrifice, Curse, and the Covenant in Paul's Soteriology

Norio Yamaguchi



University of
St Andrews

**This thesis is submitted for the degree of PhD
at the
University of St Andrews**

2015

Sacrifice, Curse, and the Covenant in Paul's Soteriology

**Presented by
Norio Yamaguchi
For the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy
April 2015**

**St Mary's College
University of St Andrews**

1. Candidate's declarations:

I, Norio Yamaguchi, hereby certify that this thesis, which is approximately 80,000 words in length, has been written by me, and that it is the record of work carried out by me, or principally by myself in collaboration with others as acknowledged, and that it has not been submitted in any previous application for a higher degree.

I was admitted as a research student in September 2011 and as a candidate for the degree of Ph D in July 2012; the higher study for which this is a record was carried out in the University of St Andrews between 2011 and 2015.

I, Norio Yamaguchi, received assistance in the writing of this thesis in respect of language, which was provided by Sandra Peniston-Bird.

Date Feb.12 2015 signature of candidate

2. Supervisor's declaration:

I hereby certify that the candidate has fulfilled the conditions of the Resolution and Regulations appropriate for the degree of Ph D in the University of St Andrews and that the candidate is qualified to submit this thesis in application for that degree.

Date 12/2/15 signature of supervisor

3. Permission for publication: *(to be signed by both candidate and supervisor)*

In submitting this thesis to the University of St Andrews I understand that I am giving permission for it to be made available for use in accordance with the regulations of the University Library for the time being in force, subject to any copyright vested in the work not being affected thereby. I also understand that the title and the abstract will be published, and that a copy of the work may be made and supplied to any bona fide library or research worker, that my thesis will be electronically accessible for personal or research use unless exempt by award of an embargo as requested below, and that the library has the right to migrate my thesis into new electronic forms as required to ensure continued access to the thesis. I have obtained any third-party copyright permissions that may be required in order to allow such access and migration, or have requested the appropriate embargo below.

The following is an agreed request by candidate and supervisor regarding the publication of this thesis:

PRINTED COPY

- a) No embargo on print copy
- b) ~~Embargo on all or part of print copy for a period of ... years (maximum five) on the following ground(s):~~
 - ~~• Publication would be commercially damaging to the researcher, or to the supervisor, or the University~~
 - ~~• Publication would preclude future publication~~
 - ~~• Publication would be in breach of laws or ethics~~
- c) ~~Permanent or longer term embargo on all or part of print copy for a period of ... years (the request will be referred to the Pro-Provost and permission will be granted only in exceptional circumstances).~~

Supporting statement for printed embargo request:

ELECTRONIC COPY

- a) ~~No embargo on electronic copy~~
- b) Embargo on all or part of electronic copy for a period of 1 year (maximum five) on the following ground(s):
 - Publication would be commercially damaging to the researcher, or to the supervisor, or the University
 - Publication would preclude future publication
 - Publication would be in breach of law or ethics

- ~~e) Permanent or longer term embargo on all or part of electronic copy for a period of ... years (the request will be referred to the Pro-Provost and permission will be granted only in exceptional circumstances).~~

Supporting statement for electronic embargo request:

Date Feb. 12 2015

signature of candidate

signature of supervisor

Please note initial embargos can be requested for a maximum of five years. An embargo on a thesis submitted to the Faculty of Science or Medicine is rarely granted for more than two years in the first instance, without good justification. The Library will not lift an embargo before confirming with the student and supervisor that they do not intend to request a continuation. In the absence of an agreed response from both student and supervisor, the Head of School will be consulted. Please note that the total period of an embargo, including any continuation, is not expected to exceed ten years. Where part of a thesis is to be embargoed, please specify the part and the reason.

Abstract

Pauline scholarship often overlooks the fact that from the Levitical sacrificial perspective “sacrifice” and “curse” are diametrically opposed concepts. A sacrifice must be “holy and acceptable to God” (Rom 12:1). Arguably, Paul describes Jesus or his blood as a sacrifice to God (1Cor 5:7; Rom 3:25). In this light, how might we understand his assertion that Christ became a “curse” on the cross (Gal 3:13)? The “accursed” person who hangs on a tree is impure and defiled and thus totally unacceptable as a sacrifice to God (Deut 21:23; John 19:31). This research argues that the key concept that resolves such potential tensions in Paul’s statements is the “covenant”.

Both “sacrifice” and “curse” are covenantal concepts. Sacrificial activities are essential for *maintaining* the covenant between God and his people. When God’s people sin, sacrifice provides the means to attain forgiveness and to remain in the covenant. However, the covenant can be broken by grievous sins such as idolatry, which result in the loss of the sanctuary and the sacrificial means. Consequently, they would fall under the “curse” of the covenant. This covenantal perspective underlies Paul’s soteriology. This thesis demonstrates that in Paul’s understanding Christ’s death serves both ends: the termination of the Mosaic curse by becoming a curse, and the dedication of his life-blood for the maintenance of the renewed covenant. These two things are related yet not identical.

As test cases for this covenantal model, this research examines three Pauline texts. Galatians 3:13 describes the redemption of God’s people from the Mosaic covenantal curse. Deutero-Isaiah envisaged this event as a new “Exodus”, about which Paul talks in 1 Corinthians 5:7. Romans 3:25 illustrates the eschatological Yom Kippur for this new Exodus people consisting now of Jews and Gentiles, which sustains and sanctifies God’s renewed covenant people to the end.

Acknowledgements

I am and shall always be obliged to my supervisors for all their help. Dr David Moffitt kindly assumed the primary supervision of this research from the third year of my Ph D studies. Ever since, he has mentored me passionately and patiently. Without his tremendous knowledge of and insight into the Jewish sacrificial practices, I could not have completed this thesis. His gentle and friendly character made him an ideal mentor for me. Professor N. T. Wright has taken a keen interest in my research from the start of this project, and has greatly encouraged and inspired me. Being a distinguished scholar in the field of New Testament studies, he has many demands on his time, nevertheless, he has never failed to provide detailed comments and insightful suggestions on my draft. Dr Grant MacAskill has supervised me since my undergraduate studies at St Mary's College. His continuous and warm support not only to my studies but also to my student life in St Andrews has greatly helped me to pursue this project. I also give a special thanks to the two examiners, Dr Alistair Wilson and Dr Mark Elliott, for their warm and insightful feedback to this thesis.

Sandra Peniston-Bird, my dear German and English teacher, has continuously and carefully helped me to deal with linguistic issues. I also highly appreciate her kind friendship to me and to my parents in Japan. Professor Richard Bauckham has always been my hero in the field of biblical studies, and he generously wrote a reference for my application to the Ph D programme. He also offered me accommodation, when I was doing research in Cambridge. I am also deeply grateful for the support of Dr Kelly Iverson during my undergraduate studies at St Mary's College. It was he who urged me to proceed to the Ph D programme, and gave me a practical advice for this. Professor Kristin De Troyer has made insightful comments on my study of the book of Leviticus. She has also supported me ever since my undergraduate studies at St Mary's College.

I sincerely want to thank the many friends and local people in St Andrews and Crail. Without their friendship and supports, I could not have completed this very challenging task. I really appreciate the congregation of St Andrews Church for enriching my spiritual life in St Andrews, especially Eric & Clare Priest. I am also grateful to the postgraduate community of St Mary's College, friends and colleagues in Rutherford Room as well as Baillie Room, where I have been working on my thesis for four years. Andrew Kaethler, in particular, has constantly supported me in the completion of this project. I wish to convey my gratitude to the helpful librarians of King James Library, Lynda Kinloch and Colin Bovaird. I also thank the Japanese

student and researcher community in St Andrews for the relaxing, enjoyable times I have spent with them. Special thanks for Tomochika Sato, who is studying for the Ph D programme in the School of History. I really appreciate my housemates and our mutual support over the course of four years. I am much obliged to a most helpful landlady, Margaret Carstairs, for providing me with a cosy amenity space. I would like to express my cordial thanks to Agathe Bauchet, my best friend. I will never forget her support and encouragement on the very day of the viva.

I should also like to express deep appreciation to those from my native country Japan who have given me support. As always, my most sincere gratitude is to my parents, Hideo and Fujiko Yamaguchi, and to my sister Ai. Indeed, this thesis itself is a fruit of our family Christian relationship in the Lord. I am very grateful to the congregations of Nakano Church, ICU Church, and Shiki Church. There are also countless friends who have supported my studies in the UK. I should like to express special thanks to Kei Nomura, Hiroshi Noda, a great entrepreneur Fumitaka Tezuka, and Professor Akio Ito.

Table of Contents

Chapter 1: Introduction (p.1)

1. Purpose statement (p.1)
2. Key issues in this research (p.5)
 2. 1 Thesis: Sacrifice and Covenant (p.5)
 2. 2 The scope of this research (p.8)
 2. 3 Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant (p.13)
 2. 4 Outline of this research (p.15)
3. History of research on Paul's use of sacrificial imagery (p.16)
 3. 1 Introduction (p.16)
 3. 2 General Trend (p.16)
 3. 2. 1 "Pre-Pauline tradition" hypothesis (p.16)
 - (i) *Rudolf Bultmann* (p.17)
 - (ii) *Ernst Käsemann* (p.19)
 - (iii) *Martin Hengel* (p.21)
 - (iv) *Assessment of the preceding views* (p.22)
 3. 2. 2 "Propitiation" or "Expiation"? (p.24)
 - (i) *Leon Morris* (p.25)
 - (ii) *James D. G. Dunn* (p.29)
 3. 2. 3 Summary (p.34)
 3. 3 W. D. Davies (p.35)
 3. 3. 1 The "new Exodus" soteriology (p.35)
 3. 3. 2 Sacrificial ideas in Paul's soteriology (p.37)
 3. 3. 3 Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology (p.37)
 3. 4 E. P. Sanders (p.39)
 3. 4. 1 Sacrifice within "covenantal nomism" (p.39)
 3. 4. 2 Sanders' participationist eschatology (p.43)
 3. 5 Michael Newton (p.45)
 3. 5. 1 The issue of "purity" in Paul's theology (p.45)
 3. 5. 2 Temple ecclesiology in Romans 3:24–25 (p.48)
 3. 6 Hudson McLean (p.49)

- 3. 7 Stephen Finlan (p.53)
- 4. Conclusion (p.58)
 - 4. 1 Summary of the history of research (p.58)
 - 4. 2 The task to be addressed (p.59)

Chapter 2: Passover and Yom Kippur for first century Jews (p.60)

- 1. Passover and Yom Kippur (p.60)
 - 1. 1 Introduction (p.60)
 - 1. 2 Methodological Remarks (p.61)
- 2. Passover (p.63)
 - 2. 1 The Passover event in the Exodus story (p.63)
 - 2. 2 The Passover feast in the first century CE (p.64)
- 3. Yom Kippur (p.68)
 - 3. 1 Introduction (p.68)
 - 3. 2 Yom Kippur as a holy convocation (p.69)
 - 3. 2. 1 Yom Kippur as the day of mercy: Philo (p.69)
 - 3. 2. 2 Yom Kippur as the day of judgement: *Festival Prayers* (p.70)
 - 3. 2. 3 Yom Kippur for all Jews (p.72)
 - 3. 3 The Temple rite on Yom Kippur (p.73)
 - 3. 3. 1 Introduction (p.73)
 - 3. 3. 2 Purpose of the blood sacrifice (a): punishment for sin? (p.73)
 - 3. 3. 3 Purpose of the blood sacrifice (b): purification from sin? (p.82)
 - 3. 3. 4 Purpose of the blood sacrifices for sins in the Yom Kippur rite (p.86)
 - 3. 3. 5 Purpose of the scapegoat ritual in the Yom Kippur rite (p.91)
 - 3. 4 Yom Kippur and Jewish eschatological hopes: Daniel 9 and 11Q Melchizedek (p.94)
- 4. Conclusion (p.100)
 - 4. 1 Differences between Passover and Yom Kippur (p.100)
 - 4. 2 The strong link between Passover and Yom Kippur (p.102)

Chapter 3: Passover and Yom Kippur motifs in Paul's letters (p.104)

1. Introduction (p.104)
2. Paul's use of *πάσχα* in 1 Corinthians 5:7 (p.105)
 2. 1 Introduction (p.105)
 2. 2 For averting the wrath of God? (p.106)
 2. 3 Preparation for the Passover meal? (p.107)
 2. 4 Sacrifice for sins? (p.109)
 2. 5 Ratification of the new covenant? (p.111)
 2. 6 Alternative view: *πάσχα* as a signpost (p.112)
3. Paul's use of sacrificial terms in Romans 3:25 (p.114)
 3. 1 Introduction (p.114)
 3. 2 Meaning of *ἄλμα* in Romans 5:9 (p.116)
 3. 3 Meaning of *ἄλμα* in 4 Maccabees (p.120)
 3. 4 Yom Kippur imagery in Romans 3:25 (p.122)
4. Conclusion (p.125)

Chapter 4: Isaianic Suffering Servant (p.127)

1. Introduction (p.127)
 1. 1 Purpose of this chapter (p.127)
 1. 2 Significance of Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology (p.127)
 1. 2. 1 Martin Hengel's argument (p.127)
 1. 2. 2 Isaiah 53 within its literary context (p.130)
 1. 3 Textual issues (p.132)
2. Meaning of the "suffering" of the servant (p.134)
 2. 1 Introduction (p.134)
 2. 2 Isaiah 53 and the blood sacrifice (p.136)
 2. 3 Isaiah 53 and the scapegoat (p.139)
 2. 4 Summary: sacrificial imagery in Isaiah 53 (p.141)
 2. 5 Suffering and the covenantal curse (p.141)
 2. 6 Sacrifice and Suffering in the late Second Temple period (p.144)

3. Isaiah 49–55 (p.149)
 3. 1 Introduction (p.149)
 3. 2 Macro structure of Isaiah 49–55 (p.150)
 3. 3 Personified Zion (p.153)
 3. 3. 1 Zion as the city as well as its inhabitants (p.153)
 3. 3. 2 Three themes associated with Zion (p.154)
 - (i) *Abrahamic promise* (p.154)
 - (ii) *New Exodus* (p.155)
 - (iii) *New Creation* (p.156)
 3. 4 The dual task of the servant (p.157)
 3. 4. 1 Redemption of Israel (p.157)
 3. 4. 2 Salvation for the nations (p.159)
 3. 5 Summary (p.160)
4. Conclusion (p.161)

Chapter 5: Christ became a curse for us (p.163)

1. Introduction (p.163)
 1. 1 Purpose of this chapter (p.163)
 1. 2 Scapegoat or Deuteronomic curse? (p.165)
 1. 3 Harmon's intertextual analysis between Isaiah and Galatians (p.169)
2. Narrative reading of Galatians (p.173)
 2. 1 Introduction (p.173)
 2. 2 Richard B. Hays (p.173)
 2. 2. 1 Introduction (p.173)
 2. 2. 2 Galatians 3:13–14: The death of Christ, the Abrahamic promise, and the Spirit (p.174)
 2. 2. 3 The shared narrative substructure in Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6 (p.177)
 2. 2. 4 The word *ἀκοή* in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5 (p.179)
 2. 2. 5 Summary (p.181)
 2. 3 James M. Scott (p.181)
 2. 3. 1 Introduction (p.181)
 2. 3. 2 Galatians 4:1–7: The new Exodus (p.182)

- 2. 3. 3 Criticism against the “Exodus” reading (p.187)
- 2. 3. 4 Galatians 3:10 (p.189)
 - (i) *Problems of the traditional interpretation* (p.189)
 - (ii) *Subjection to the gentile power as a sign of the covenantal curse* (p.192)
 - (iii) *Scott’s interpretation on Galatians 3:10* (p.195)
- 2. 3. 4 Critical assessment of Scott’s arguments (p.199)
 - (i) *Who are “under the law”?* (p.199)
 - (ii) *Who are “under the curse of the law”?* (p.203)
 - (iii) *Reconsidering of Galatians 4:3–7* (p.207)
- 2. 3. 5 Summary (p.210)
- 2. 4 Florentino García Martínez (p.210)
 - 2. 4. 1 Introduction (p.210)
 - 2. 4. 2 “Works of the law” (p.211)
 - 2. 4. 3 Spirit as a sign of the eschatological blessings (p.215)
 - 2. 4. 4 Summary (p.220)
- 2. 5 N. T. Wright (p.220)
 - 2. 5. 1 Introduction (p.220)
 - 2. 5. 2 Galatians 2:11–2:21: The Antioch incident (p.222)
 - 2. 5. 3 Galatians 3:1–9: The story of Abraham (p.223)
 - 2. 5. 4 Galatians 3:10–14: Curse and blessing (p.229)
 - 2. 5. 5 Galatians 3:15–4:11: The ambiguity of the law (p.234)
 - 2. 5. 6 Galatians 4:21–5:1: The story of Hagar and Sarah in the light of Isaiah (p.235)
 - 2. 5. 7 Summary (p.240)
- 3. Conclusion (p.241)
- 4. Further implications (p.244)

Chapter 6: Conclusion (p.245)

Bibliography (p.249)

Chapter 1: Introduction

1. Purpose statement

The purpose of the present dissertation is to explore the role of sacrifice in relation to the covenant within Paul's soteriology.¹ In this research, the notion of *sacrifice* itself will be carefully examined in the first century Jewish context.² Hence, we shall use this term with the greatest circumspection, seeking to avoid both reductionistic and anachronistic approaches to this term. That is to say, sacrifice in this study denotes various acts involving in making offerings to God conducted in the sanctuary. These are prescribed in the book of Leviticus and other Pentateuchal books,³ and were practiced in the late Second Temple period.⁴

While Pauline scholars almost unanimously agree that sacrificial elements are present in Paul's soteriological statements, there is little consensus regarding the question of whether the sacrificial perspective is at the heart of his soteriology. In fact, there has been a long-standing scholarly tendency to regard sacrificial ideas as nonessential in Paul's soteriology. For those scholars, Paul merely borrows some sacrificial terms from various traditions circulating around

¹ In this dissertation, the term "sacrificial" is not used as a synonym for the term "cultic". Since the Jewish idea of "sacrifice" denotes what is dedicated to God, I use this term with this specific bearing. The word "cult" can denote the act of worship in general. Hence, I use this term in a broader sense, which refers to a wide range of practices and ideas in Second Temple Judaism. Moreover, I distinguish the term "Levitical" from that of "Jewish". While the former refers to the ideas found mainly in the book of Leviticus, the latter covers the notions conceived by Jews living in the late Second Temple period.

² Concerning the biblical notion of sacrifice, Eberhart helpfully comments, 'Even though the rituals and individual instructions for all of these types of sacrifice are different, the priestly texts employ one comprehensive term for all of them: קָרַבַּן (Lev 1:2, 3, 10, 14; 2:1, 4, 7, 12; 3:1; 4:23, 28, 32; 5:11; 7:38; etc.; see also 17:4; Num 15:4). This term is a nominal derivative from the root קָרַב – "to draw near, to bring near"...It captures the dynamic movement of sacrificial material toward the sanctuary and ultimately toward God who, according to the priestly concepts, resides there' (2011a, 23).

³ Hence, sacrifices signify not simply domesticated animals, but also cereals, flour, oil, frankincense, salt, unleavened cakes, and wine.

⁴ We have no interest in reconstructing the history and development of Jewish cultus. Rather, since our scope of the research lies in the first century CE, we focus on the sacrificial practices in the late Second Temple period.

the earliest churches, but these sacrificial categories ‘do not contain Paul’s characteristic view’.⁵

E. P. Sanders, having stressed the centrality of atonement and forgiveness in Palestinian Judaism, still maintains that the Jewish notion of atonement is not at the centre of Paul’s soteriology.⁶ According to Sanders, when Paul uses sacrificial imagery in his soteriological statements, he merely repeats pre-Pauline traditions that understand Jesus’ death from the sacrificial perspective.⁷

Nonetheless, the fact remains that Paul does adopt sacrificial terms in his letters (e.g., Rom 3:25). Moreover, there is a growing scholarly awareness of the “Jewishness” of Paul and his way of thinking.⁸ Given the enormous significance of the Temple and its cultus in the late Second Temple period, it is questionable to assume sacrificial elements as nonessential in Paul’s thought.⁹ Some prominent scholars thus reclaim the importance of the idea of sacrifice in Paul’s soteriology.¹⁰ Among these scholars, however, there is a tendency to pass over the diversity of the sacrificial terms or ideas Paul employs. For instance, they often confuse the scapegoat ritual with the blood-sacrificial rituals.¹¹ In another instance, not a few scholars

⁵ Bultmann 1952, 296.

⁶ Concerning the English term “atonement”, McGrath states, ‘The term “theory of the atonement” has become commonplace in English-language theology as a term for “a way of understanding the work of Christ.” The term was used especially extensively in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. However, there is increasing evidence that this term is seen as cumbersome and unhelpful by many modern Christian writers, across the entire spectrum of theological viewpoints’ (2007 [1993], 330). Bearing this point in mind, I shall use the word “atone” or “atonement” as a technical term for signifying **כפר** in Hebrew and its Greek equivalent ἐξιλάσκειν.

⁷ Cf. Sanders 1977, 463-6.

⁸ Frey states, ‘Pauline scholarship today can more easily acknowledge that Paul still acted and preached within a Jewish context. Paul’s Jewish identity as such is not a major problem any more’ (2014, 240).

⁹ Klawans argues, ‘Indeed, when we look a little deeper into Paul’s descriptions of sacrificial worship, we find that Paul affirms many of the fundamental theological tenets upon which ancient Jewish sacrificial worship is based’ (2006, 220).

¹⁰ E.g., Stuhlmacher 1989, 60; Dunn 1998, 212.

¹¹ See our review of James Dunn below. The “blood-sacrificial ritual” signifies a ritual that involves blood manipulation in the sanctuary. The most typical ritual is the sin offering, in which blood assumes the central role. There are also the burnt offering, the peace (well-being) offering, and the guilt offering.

categorise the Passover sacrifice as a “sacrifice for sins” without providing a convincing argument.¹² As will be discussed in the next chapter, however, the paschal lamb for the Passover feast is best categorised as a “thanksgiving offering”, which is *not*, by definition, a sacrifice for sins.

In recent decades, the tendency to minimise and reduce the variety of Paul’s sacrificial ideas has been challenged by an increasing interest in the diversity of the sacrificial concepts Paul utilises. Some scholars’ studies enhance our understanding of the complexity of sacrificial imagery in Paul’s salvific statements. There is, nonetheless, still room for further consideration in this regard. Stephen Finlan, aware of the diversity of Paul’s sacrificial concepts, claims that Paul considers that Jesus, through his death, fulfils each and every sacrificial activity of the Temple cult.¹³ Yet, this way of understanding poses a vexing problem. Roy E. Gane’s account of “sacrifice” explains the potential problem of Finlan’s account.

In Hebrew, the idea of “sacrifice” in general is conveyed by the noun *qorban*...The meaning of *qorban* is associated with that of the Hiphil verb from the same root *qrb* (lit., “cause to come near”), which can refer not only to preliminary conveyance of offering material to the ritual location (e.g., [Lev] 1:3), but also to formal ritual presentation to the Lord (e.g., [Lev] 1:5, 13). This formal presentation *transfers something to the holy God for his utilization*. So a *qorban* (“sacrifice, sacrificial offering”) *makes* something holy by giving it over to the holy domain of God.¹⁴

Ancient Jews treated sacrificial animals with great care so as not to harm or afflict them. As Bradley McLean explains, ‘Sacrificial animals were killed quickly and efficiently by cutting

¹² See the following scholarly review in this chapter.

¹³ Finlan 2004, 177-8.

¹⁴ Gane 2004, 78.

their throat with a sharp knife. A carelessly performed, and therefore painful, slaying would risk having the animal swallow its own blood, thereby jeopardising the worthiness of the animal for sacrifice'.¹⁵ Any sacrifice offered to God must be holy and spotless, and what is damaged or harmed is unfit for this purpose. It is unlikely that Paul was ignorant of such a basic Jewish idea of "sacrifice" (cf. Rom 12:1; Phil 4:18). This raises, among several other questions, the intriguing question of what Paul means by his statement in Galatians 3:13. Given that Jesus became a *curse*, how then was it possible for him to be offered to God as a sacrifice? A person who is "accursed" would seem to be disqualified for a holy sacrifice to God. Finlan would respond to this that Paul thinks that Jesus simultaneously assumes the roles of both *cursed* scapegoat and *holy* sacrifice.¹⁶ However, it remains uncertain whether Paul in fact alludes to the scapegoat ritual in Galatians 3:13.¹⁷ It is also important to note that the scapegoat can be called a holy sacrifice to God (cf. Lev 16:5).¹⁸

A more fundamental question concerns whether or not the cursedness of Christ can be compatible with the sacredness of sacrifice. While the flesh taken from the dead body of the sacrificial animal for sins, which is eaten by priests within the sanctuary, is "most holy" (Lev 6:29; cf. Lev 10:17),¹⁹ the corpse of the man hanging on a tree is impure and defiling (Deut 21:23). Hence, it is difficult to imagine that first century Jews could think that an accursed person who hangs on a tree could be eligible as a holy sacrifice (cf. John 19:31). If Paul thinks

¹⁵ McLean 1996, 48. E. P. Sanders also comments, 'A deft stroke would sever the carotid arteries relatively painlessly, the blood would gush out, and the animal would soon lose consciousness' (1992, 107).

¹⁶ Finlan claims, 'He [Paul] is not looking to harmonize these [cultic] metaphors but to encapsulate the *significance* of the death' (2005, 51) [Finlan's emphasis].

¹⁷ We shall consider this question in chapter 5.

¹⁸ See our discussion in chapter 2.3.3.5.

¹⁹ Concerning the flesh that is burned with fire outside the camp, see the detailed study of Kiuchi (1987, 130-42).

that Jesus was, at some point in time, dedicated to God as a holy sacrifice, does he consider that Jesus was, at the same moment, *cursed* by God or the law?

Having realised the intricacy of Paul's sacrificial or cultic vocabulary, some scholars therefore suggest that there is no coherence in thought in Paul's use of sacrificial ideas.²⁰ This research attempts to show that Paul is indeed a thoughtful and consistent Jewish thinker, and his soteriological thinking is deeply rooted in Jewish sacrificial ideas. However, given the complexity of his soteriological thought, we need a broader framework in which Paul's various ideas and thoughts can be satisfactorily connected. We posit the notion of the "covenant" as such a framework. To test our hypothesis, we shall examine some key passages from the Pauline corpus.²¹ For now, it is helpful to explain some essential points that will be fully developed and defended in the following chapters.

2. Key issues in this research

2. 1 Thesis: Sacrifice, Curse, and the Covenant

In the first place, we postulate that Paul understands both *sacrifice* and *curse* as essential components of the *covenant* between God and his people. It is vital to stress that the purpose of the sacrificial system as a whole is to *maintain the covenant relationship*. When the covenant is

²⁰ Fredriksen suggests, 'Paul's letters are shot through with the language of sanctuary, sacrifice, purity and holiness. Alas, much of it is confusing' (2010, 247).

²¹ I limit the scope of this research to the epistles that are commonly regarded as genuinely Pauline (i.e., Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Philippians, 1 Thessalonians, and Philemon). Unless otherwise stated, the biblical quotations are taken from *New Revised Standard Version* (NRSV). Concerning English quotations of the so-called Septuagintal texts (LXX), I shall use the translation of *A New English Translation of the Septuagint* (NETS). In this thesis, the "Jewish" scriptures represent both Hebrew *Vorlage* texts and Old Greek texts, whereas the "Hebrew" scriptures signify Hebrew (and Aramaic) texts alone. We presuppose the fluidity of "scriptures" in the first century milieu, and pay attention to textual variance when necessary.

intact, the people of the covenant enjoy the divine presence in their midst (Exod 29:45), and the daily sacrificial offering ‘serves to maintain that presence among the community’.²² Moreover, if God’s people commit sins as an individual or as a group, they can be spared from God’s wrathful judgement through conducting sacrificial remedies in an appropriate manner. Once the covenant is broken, however, sacrifice becomes ineffective, and curse follows.²³

An example may help to illuminate this point. The infant Samuel was given the oracle concerning the doom of Eli’s house: “Therefore I swear to the house of Eli that the iniquity of Eli’s house shall not be expiated by sacrifice or offering forever” (1Sam 3:14).²⁴ This oracle suggests not simply God’s rejection of Eli’s priesthood, but also the fracture of the covenant between God and his people. According to the book of Leviticus, the sins of priests bring guilt on the people as a whole (cf. Lev 4:3). Indeed, in the following narrative the fall of Eli’s house accompanied the subsequent loss of the sanctuary and the departure of God’s glory (1Sam 4:22; cf. Jer 7:12). As a result, God’s people lost the means to maintain the covenant. The same sequence was recapitulated on a much larger scale in the Babylonian exile (e.g., 2Kgs 24:3–4; Jer 7:14; 52:13; Lam 2:6; Ezek 11:22–25). The Jewish scriptures declare that the people under the broken covenant must endure suffering and punishment as the curse of the covenant (e.g.,

²² Klawans 2006, 70. Hence, Gese’s description of the sacrificial system is reductionist. He reduces the whole purpose of the sacrificial system to “atonement”, as he states: ‘The whole sacrificial system [in the post-exilic era] serves to atone and finds its meaning in the atoning function of sacrifice itself’ (1981, 103).

²³ Klawans helpfully explains: ‘In the absence of grave sin, the regular and proper performance of sacrificial service attracts and maintains the dwelling of the divine presence in the sanctuary. Moral defilement—brought about by actions God finds utterly repugnant—threatens to undo this state of affairs. It stands to reason that in the presence of grave sin, sacrifice is no longer adequate to the task of attracting and maintaining the divine presence among the people of Israel’ (Ibid., 93).

²⁴ Gese insists that, because the sin offering was instituted *after* the Babylonian exile, the sacrifice mentioned here could not be a sacrifice for sins (1981, 98). But the Jewish Bible clearly states that it was instituted before the Exodus event. Gese relies too much on his hypothetical reconstruction of the history of the Jewish cultus.

Lev 26:14–39; Deut 28:15–68; Jer 26:6; Lam 1:3; Dan 9:11). Since the sacrificial means are not designed to undo or mitigate the curse, the people of the broken covenant can only rely on God’s faithfulness to the covenant (cf. Lev 26:40–45; Dan 9:15–19). They hope, with humble hearts, that God remembers the covenant with their ancestors, and will restore the broken covenant at an appropriate time. In addition to this, we should take one more important factor into consideration for grasping this issue in the first century context. Around the time of the Maccabean crisis, there emerged the idea that the suffering of the faithful to the covenant could reverse the covenantal curse (cf. 2Macc 6:12–17; 7:32–38).

Another vital point to be explored is that Paul seems to consider that the covenant relationship between God and Jews has long been broken, as Berkley comments on Romans 2:23–24: ‘It is scriptural statements (cited and uncited) of Israel’s disobedience that lead Paul to the conclusion, and in the case of Isa 52:5 serve as his proof, that the Jews have broken the law to such an extent as to dishonor God. For Paul, that prophetic conclusion continues to be in effect for contemporary Jews’.²⁵ In other words, Paul thinks that Jews in his own time have been kept under the covenantal curse (cf. Gal 3:10).²⁶

All these points are vital to unpack the complexity of Paul’s soteriology. From this covenantal vantage point, we hypothesise a holistic picture of Paul’s soteriology as follows: At the heart of Paul’s soteriology lies the theme of the covenant renewal foretold by Jeremiah and

²⁵ Berkley 2000, 137. Gathercole also maintains, ‘the accusations in 2:21–22 of stealing, adultery, and sacrilege make little sense as a description of the “typical Jew”; rather, it is the presence of these sins in the nation to which Paul is referring. Finally, the description of exile in 2:24 points to a *national* experience: exile makes little sense on an individual level in the Jewish mindset’ (2002, 199) [Gathercole’s emphasis].

²⁶ See especially Hays 1989, 45–6, 163–4. We shall discuss this point in depth in chapter 5.

other prophets (cf. Jer 31:31–37; Ezek 36:22–32; Isa 59:21),²⁷ with the inclusion of Gentiles in it (Rom 15:7–13; cf. Isa 56:6). In order for this prophetic vision to be realised, however, Jesus must have dealt with the problem of the covenantal curse, caused by the fracture of the Mosaic covenant. Jesus, through himself becoming a curse on the cross, redeemed those Jews who trusted in him (Gal 3:13). This has opened up a way of the renewal of the covenant, to which Gentiles are now invited as equal partners with Jews (Gal 3:28; cf. Eph 2:11–22). Paul perceives this whole event as a new Exodus (1Cor 5:7), as both Jews and Gentiles need to be redeemed from the dominion of sin and death (Rom 6:20–23; 8:2). Having inaugurated the renewed covenant, Jesus himself became *ἱλαστήριον* where his life-blood was dedicated through his death and *resurrection* (cp. Rom 4:25; 5:9), for justifying and sanctifying, and maintaining the covenant people to the end. In this covenantal scheme, the idea that Christ became a curse is clearly distinguished from the idea that his life-blood was dedicated in the most holy place as the most holy sacrifice.

We shall demonstrate that this covenantal model provides a reasonable framework that enables us to grasp how seemingly incompatible concepts, such as “sacrifice” and “curse”, fit together in Paul’s soteriology.

2. 2 The scope of this research

To test the validity of the proposed covenantal model, we examine three passages from the

²⁷ In agreement with, e.g., W. D. Davies 1980 [1948] 260-1; Hafemann 1995, 119-28. On 2 Corinthians 3:1-4:6, Sampley explains; ‘In two powerful ways, Paul interlaces the Jeremiah passage with the one about Moses. First there is the shared reference to covenant (Exod 34:27-28; Jer 31:32-33). Second, Paul makes an implicit contrast of Jeremiah’s “I will write it on their hearts” (Jer 31:33 NRSV) with the old covenant, whose statutes, according to the first passage and widely in Israel’s Scriptures, were written or cut into stone (implied, but not stated in Jeremiah 31)’ (2000, 64).

Pauline corpus: 1 Corinthians 5:7, Romans 3:25, and Galatians 3:13. We have selected these passages because they seem to invoke the three Jewish themes of Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant, respectively.²⁸ These themes, as will be shown, are critically important for the purpose of our study, since all of them are closely tied with the notion of the “covenant”.²⁹

Another important reason for choosing these three texts is that while both 1 Corinthians 5:7 and Romans 3:25 contain sacrificial imagery, Galatians 3:13 seems not use the language of sacrifice.³⁰ We attempt to show that Paul marshals both sacrificial and non-sacrificial terms in his accounts of the Christ event under the overarching theme of the “covenant”.

In this connection, in the course of our investigation, we must be aware of an important issue. One of the difficulties in the study of Paul’s soteriology arises from the elusiveness of the word “sin” in Paul’s writings. This term can signify either a human misconduct (e.g., 1Cor 6:18), or the enslaving power active over humanity (e.g., Rom 7:21–25).³¹ In the former case, humans are the subjects of sinful behaviours, whereas in the latter case humans could be regarded as the victims of the malevolent force called “sin”.³² J. Louis Martyn asserts that only the latter category is important to Paul: ‘Paul, when he is formulating his own view, consistently

²⁸ In this thesis, the term “suffering servant” refers to the figure depicted in Isaiah 52:13–53:12. We shall consider the relation of this passage with the rest of the so-called “servant poems” (Isa 42:1–9; 49:1–13; 50:4–11) in chapter 4. To be sure, the relationship between Galatians 3:13 and the Isaianic suffering servant is far from obvious. Indeed, one of the main tasks of this research is to demonstrate the relatedness between the two.

²⁹ I will explain this point in the next section.

³⁰ The latter point is disputed, especially as to a possible allusion to the scapegoat ritual. We shall discuss this issue in depth in chapter 5.

³¹ As Baker states, ‘Paul radicalizes this Jewish concept of sin. Once a person has transgressed, the option to obey or disobey ceases. Sin, so to speak, grows over a person’s head and traps him into bondage. In other words, sin commences as a seemingly corrigible transgression by the person but ends as a power over the person’ (1980, 215).

³² As Bultmann states, ‘this language stamps *flesh and sin as powers to which man has fallen victim and against which he is powerless*’ (1952, 245) [Bultmann’s emphasis].

speaks not of sins, but rather of Sin, identifying it as a power that holds human beings in a state of slavery. And he sees liberation rather than forgiveness as the fundamental remedy enacted by God'.³³

Martyn's dichotomistic distinction of the two categories of sin in Paul's thought is hardly convincing, however. While "sin" as a cosmic power is certainly significant in Paul's soteriology, this does not justify the reduction of the importance of the former category of "sin" in his thought. It must be stressed that the "cosmic" category and the "sacrificial" category would not have been contradictory for some Jews and Paul alike. In a Jewish symbolic world in the late Second Temple era, sacrificial imagery often cohabited with cosmic or apocalyptic images.³⁴ A quintessential case is the canonical book of Daniel. In 11Q Melchizedek, moreover, we can find a good example of the Yom Kippur imagery being associated with the theme of the cosmic battle against "anti-creational" characters such as Belial.³⁵ We detect a similar combination in Paul's discourse in the epistle to the Romans, namely, the Yom Kippur imagery (Rom 3:25) and the cosmic battle between the God of Israel and the enslaving power of sin (e.g., Rom 6:14; 8:3).³⁶ Theologically speaking, it would have been possible for Paul to consider that humans are both responsible for and victimised by "sin".

Another important point is, whereas God's act of liberation, such as the Exodus event, can be offered to those who are outside the covenant, the Levitical idea of forgiveness of sins

³³ Martyn 1997, 90.

³⁴ We can find a good example of such a combination in the "Book of Watchers (chs. 1–36)" in *1 Enoch*. In this narrative, the defeat of the "Giants" coincides with the purification of the earth and the atonement for sins (10:11–11:2).

³⁵ See chapter 2,3.4.

³⁶ On Romans 8:3, N. T. Wright writes, 'God, says Paul, condemned sin. Paul does not, unlike some, say that God condemned Jesus...It is about sentence of death being passed on "sin" itself, sin as a force or power capable of deceiving human beings, taking up residence within them, and so causing their death (7:7–25)' (2002, 578).

presupposes that those who are forgiven are within the Mosaic covenant. It is important to remember that the Exodus from Egypt preceded the ratification of the Sinai covenant. In other words, the Israelites were “outside” the covenant when being delivered from the yoke of Egypt. After the establishment of the covenant, the sacrificial system was instituted, which provided forgiveness of sins for the covenant people. If Paul is thinking according to this covenantal paradigm, his emphasis on the liberation from Sin prior to or coinciding with the institution of the new covenant does not suggest that he belittles the idea of forgiveness of sins. In fact, he is aware of the needs of forgiveness of sins for those who are “within” the new covenant (cf. 2Cor 2:7, 10). For these reasons, it is missing the point to ask which category of sin is at the heart of Paul’s soteriology.

Bearing this point in mind, we primarily pursue the significance of the former category of sin in relation to sacrifice and the covenant. While we must be careful to distinguish subtle differences in Paul’s usage of the term sin, the origin of the concept of sin as a cosmic power in Paul’s thought is outside the main scope of our research.³⁷ For this reason, we shall not conduct a substantial survey on Romans 8:3. That is, whereas the phrase *περὶ ἁμαρτίας* in this verse denotes or at least connotes a sacrificial offering,³⁸ this statement unmistakably involves the theme of the cosmic battle between the God of Israel and “sin” as the enslaving power.

For a similar reason, we do not include 2 Corinthians 5:21 in our main discussions. The statement in this verse involves latent ambiguity: *τὸν μὴ γνόντα ἁμαρτίαν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἁμαρτίαν ἐποίησεν* (2Cor 5:21a). Some commentators interpret the former *ἁμαρτίαν* as “sin”, but the same

³⁷ In Isaiah 40–55, we can find the theme of the cosmic or primordial battle between God and anti-creational forces (e.g., Isa 51:9). However, the idea of the personification of sin does not appear in the Isaianic text.

³⁸ See our discussion on this point in the review of Hudson Mclean in this chapter.

word in the latter as “sin offering”.³⁹ F. F. Bruce defends this reading by indicating that the Hebrew word **חַטָּאת** can signify both “sin” and “sin offering”.⁴⁰ This rendering, however, attracts much criticism.⁴¹ If Paul had intended to say that “God made Jesus who knew no *sin* (*ἁμαρτίαν*) to be a *sin offering* (*ἁμαρτίαν*)”, he could have avoided such an ambiguous expression by choosing a more normal expression such as *περὶ ἁμαρτίας* (cf. Rom 8:3; Heb 5:3; 10:6, 8, 18, 26; 13:1) or *θυσία ὑπὲρ ἁμαρτιῶν* (cf. Heb 5:1; 10:12). In fact, there is not a single instance elsewhere in New Testament writings where the absolute use of *ἁμαρτία* denotes the sin offering. In LXX, there are ample instances where *ἁμαρτία* signifies a “slaughtered animal offered to atone” (e.g., Exod 29:36; Lev 4:8, 20, 24, 25, 29, 33),⁴² but in these cases there is no ambiguity as to whether it stands for “sin” or “sin offering”. Hence, it is by no means certain whether *ἁμαρτία* in this specific case signifies a *sacrifice* at all. Rather, given that this word could be translated as “sin”, it seems that there is a conceptual similarity between the expression *ἁμαρτίαν ἐποίησεν* in 2 Corinthians 5:32 and the phrase *ἐν ὁμοίωματι σαρκὸς ἁμαρτίας* in Romans 8:3.⁴³

Hence, as was mentioned above, we focus on the three Pauline texts with special attention to the key terms in these passages, which explicitly or implicitly invoke the three Jewish themes

³⁹ Plummer comments, ‘The authority of Augustine, who states the view repeatedly, especially in his anti-Pelagian treaties, has caused many to solve the difficulty of “made him to be *ἁμαρτίαν*” by supposing that *ἁμαρτίαν*, *peccatum*, here means “sin-offering”’ (1915, 187). Augustine states: ‘But I do not think that this passage in which Christ who did not know sin is said to have been made sin by God can be better interpreted than in the sense that Christ was made a sacrifice for sins and for this reason was called sin’. *Answer to the Two Letters of the Pelagians* III, 6. 16.

⁴⁰ Bruce 1971, 210.

⁴¹ See, e.g., P. Bachmann 1909, 272-4; Plummer, *op. cit.*, 187-8; Furnish 1984, 340; McLean 1996, 108-9; Garland 1999, 300.

⁴² Muraoka, “*ἁμαρτία*,” 31.

⁴³ As Käsemann argues, ‘The remarkable mythical idea of a condemnation of sin in the flesh of the Crucified has its close parallel in the sentence in 2 Cor 5:21 and is not far from the statement in Col 2:14f’ (1980, 217).

of Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant, respectively: *πάσχα* (1Cor 5:7), *ἱλαστήριον* and *αἷμα* (Rom 3:25), and *κατάρα* (Gal 3:13).

2. 3 Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant

As mentioned above, the three passages to be examined (1Cor 5:7; Rom 3:25; Gal 3:13) appear to be closely related to the three themes of Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic servant. It is helpful to indicate how these themes are related to the covenant, and to one another.

Passover celebrates God's faithfulness to his covenantal promises, which was manifested and confirmed in the Exodus event (cf. Exod 2:24). Yom Kippur is the most important day for the maintenance of the covenant between God and Israel. The Isaianic suffering servant redeems God's covenant people from the covenantal curse, namely, the exile. In addition to their individual connectedness to the notion of the covenant, they are also mutually interrelated in important ways within a larger covenantal framework.

For instance, for first century Jews or Gentiles who were familiar with the Jewish scriptures, the word *πάσχα* would not have simply signified a sacrificial animal that was slaughtered and consumed during the Passover feast. Rather, as will be shown in the next chapter, due to the symbolic significance of this animal within the Exodus story, the reference to this word could have evoked the entire Exodus narrative.⁴⁴ The Exodus story was critically important for Jews because it affirmed God's faithfulness to his covenantal promises. Paul seems to exploit this evocative power of *πάσχα* to stress the fact that the Christ event

⁴⁴ Umberto Eco explains this point well: 'Meanings are common social beliefs, sometimes mutually contradictory and historically rooted, rather than undated and theoretically fixed constructs...the "common core of factual beliefs" are not beliefs "about referents" but the actual cultural definition that a society conventionally accepts for a given content unit' (1976, 99).

accomplished the new Exodus,⁴⁵ which manifests God's everlasting faithfulness to his covenant people (cf. 1Cor 1:8–9, 10:13). Notably, too, the new Exodus theme is one of the most prominent theological motifs of Isaiah 40–55 (e.g., Isa 43:5–6; 51:10–11; 52:3–4). There, the vicarious suffering and death of the servant leads to the new Exodus for those who have been captive in the state of exile. We shall discuss in detail Paul's contemplation of Jesus' death against this Isaianic new Exodus backdrop. Hence, the image of the Passover feast can be meaningfully connected in Paul's mind to the new Exodus envisioned by Deutero-Isaiah.⁴⁶

Likewise, the theme of Yom Kippur can be related to the Exodus motif. As will be seen, the new Exodus hope was closely intertwined with the expectation of the forgiveness of sins, because certain grave sins were generally thought to be the root cause of the exile, which Deuteronomy identifies as the curse of the covenant. For Jews in the late Second Temple period, Yom Kippur was the most important day in the annual calendar on which all the sins were forgiven and the whole congregation purified, which reconfirmed the covenant relationship between God and his people.⁴⁷ Once again, forgiveness of the sins of God's covenant people is one of the central themes in Isaiah 40–55 (cf. Isa 43:25; 44:22), which is accomplished through the suffering of the servant (Isa 53:4–6). Hence, it would not be surprising if Jews in the Second Temple period colligated the Exodus, Yom Kippur, and Isaianic motifs in their eschatological hope, as we can find such a case in 11Q Melchizedek.⁴⁸ We contend that the same holds true

⁴⁵ To my knowledge, W. D. Davies is the first scholar to strongly advocate the "New Exodus" understanding of Paul's soteriology. See our review of his works in this chapter (2. 3). In his study of Mark's Gospel, Rikki Watts demonstrates the importance of the "Isaianic" New Exodus theme in the early Christian movement (1997).

⁴⁶ Bauckham suggests that John the seer would have connected these two themes together: 'He may well have connected this verse [Rev 5:6, 9] with the new exodus language of Deutero-Isaiah and seen the Suffering Servant of Isaiah 53 as the Passover lamb of the new exodus' (1993, 71).

⁴⁷ See our discussion in chapter 2,3.

⁴⁸ Cf. chapter 2,3.4.

for Paul's soteriology.

Throughout this research, therefore, we shall demonstrate that the "covenant" is the hermeneutical key by which these three Jewish themes are organically and meaningfully connected.

2. 4 Outline of this research

As mentioned above, the present research is conducted through the examination of the three passages (1Cor 5:7; Rom 3:25; Gal 3:13) against the backdrops of the three Jewish themes of Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant. The goal of this investigation is to demonstrate the validity of the covenantal model presented above.

In chapter 2, we shall explore the meanings for first century Jews of Passover and Yom Kippur. In the next chapter, we apply the outcomes of what we studied to 1 Corinthians 5:7 and Romans 3:25, respectively.

In chapter 4, we shall proceed to the study of Isaiah 53 conceptually as well as contextually. In the following chapter, we shall consider Galatians 3:13 in this Isaianic light.

In the final chapter, we shall conclude that the Passover, Yom Kippur, and Isaianic servant motifs can cohere in the covenantal framework. Prior to going into these tasks, we must review the history of research on our subject.

3. History of research on Paul's use of sacrificial imagery

3. 1 Introduction

Despite the enormous interest in Paul's soteriology, scholars rarely write monographs on the history of research about the complexity of the cultic vocabulary in Paul's soteriological statements.⁴⁹ Nor can we here offer an encyclopaedic account of the various scholarly views expressed over many generations. Rather, we shall first critically review the overall trends of scholarly views on and attitudes to this issue, and then turn our attention to several key scholars who contribute significantly to the advancement of this area of research.

3. 2 General trends

3. 2. 1 "Pre-Pauline tradition" hypothesis

We begin our survey with those scholars who consider that Paul depends almost exclusively on early Christian traditions whenever he appeals to sacrificial imagery. Although each scholar examined below holds a significantly different view on Paul's theology in some critical aspects, they seem to share a similar assumption as to Paul's usage of sacrificial terms or ideas. By examining these highly influential figures in the history of Pauline studies, we shall trace a general tendency in Pauline scholarship concerning our specific issue. Here, in order to highlight the complexity of Paul's cultic vocabulary, we shall broaden the scope of research, paying attention to wider texts: Romans 3:25, Romans 8:3, 1 Corinthians 5:7, 2 Corinthians

⁴⁹ The "cultic" vocabulary is not identical with the "sacrificial" vocabulary, as mentioned in the opening sentence. As will be discussed in due course, the term "curse" should not be regarded as a sacrificial term.

5:21, and Galatians 3:13, since each of them contains interesting issues.

(i) Rudolf Bultmann

Bultmann, a towering figure of New Testament studies in the twentieth century, maintains that at the heart of Paul's soteriology is the Gnostic Redeemer myth.⁵⁰ According to Bultmann, Judaism at the time of Jesus and Paul was a legalistic religion, on which Paul turned his back.⁵¹ Bultmann describes "Jewish legalism" as 'a form of piety which regards the will of God as expressed in the written Law and in the Tradition which interprets it, a piety which endeavors to win God's favor by the toil of minutely fulfilling the Law's stipulation'.⁵² In Bultmann's understanding, Jews took the purpose of cultic and ritual laws as God's demand rather than God's gracious provision to attain atonement and forgiveness. According to Bultmann, Jews observed sacrificial practices without knowing why.⁵³ Hence, in Bultmann's view, despite the fact that Paul adopts sacrificial motifs in such statements as that of Romans 3:25, these are peripheral in Paul's soteriology. Paul merely borrows them from various traditions circulating around the earliest churches, but 'Die für ihn charakteristische Anschauung ist darin jedenfalls nicht enthalten'.⁵⁴ Under this assumption, Bultmann argues that many of Paul's soteriological statements are predicated on two Jewish sacrificial notions: 'die Auffassung des Todes Jesu als

⁵⁰ Bultmann 1952, 298-303.

⁵¹ In Bultmann's word, Paul accepted 'God's condemnation of his Jewish striving after righteousness by fulfilling the works of the Law' (Ibid., 187).

⁵² Ibid., 11. Concerning Bultmann's view on late Second Temple Judaism, see especially Bultmann 1956, 59-61.

⁵³ Bultmann states, 'But in general the temple cult with its sacrifices was carried out as an act of obedience—for was it not commanded in the Law?' (Ibid., 17).

⁵⁴ Bultmann 1970, 296. Since I find English translation unsatisfactory as to the sacrificial terms, I henceforth use Bultmann's German original.

Sühnopfers’, and as ‘stellvertretenden Opfers’.⁵⁵ The former idea, the sin offering, stands behind a number of statements, such as Romans 3:25, 1 Corinthians 15:3, and Galatians 1:4.⁵⁶ The quintessential examples of the latter, the substitutionary offering, appear in 2 Corinthians 5:21 as well as Galatians 3:13. Bultmann states:

Es wäre verkehrt, den Hauptsatz so zu verstehen, daß Gott den (im ethischen Sinne) sündlosen Christus so behandelte, „als ob“ er ein Sünder wäre (was an sich nicht falsch wäre). Vielmehr soll der Satz die paradoxe Tatsache aussagen, daß Gott den (ethisch) sündlosen Christus zum Sünder (im forensischen Sinne) machte, – dadurch nämlich, daß er ihn am Kreuz als Verfluchten sterben ließ (vgl. Gl 3,13). Entsprechend sagt der Finalsatz, daß wir (durch ihn) zu Gerechten (im forensischen Sinne) werden sollen.⁵⁷

Bultmann’s comments betray his insensitivity toward the Jewish notion of *sacrifice*. Although he describes the “death” of Jesus as an offering for sins, such an idea contradicts the holy character of Jewish sacrifice. A sacrifice is dedicated to God, but death is detestable to God (e.g., Deut 21:22–23).⁵⁸ Even though death is often a constitutive part of the ritual process through which what is dedicated to God (e.g., blood) can be obtained, death itself cannot be a sacrifice.⁵⁹ How can one offer something detestable to God in order to propitiate or please him? With respect to his comment on Galatians 3:13, we can raise a similar question. If Christ was

⁵⁵ Ibid., 295, 296.

⁵⁶ Ibid., 295.

⁵⁷ Ibid., 277–8.

⁵⁸ As Gane explains: ‘It appears that the common denominator between various physical ritual impurities – corpse contamination, degeneration of skin by scaly skin disease, and loss of fluids from the reproductive organs – has to do with death. However, this is not death in general. Maccoby points out that life-threatening loss of blood from a wound was not ritually impure, as we would expect if all death were in view. By contrast, genital discharges that were not physically dangerous caused defilement (Lev. 15). So Maccoby convincingly narrows the death focus of physical ritual impurity to “an expression of the birth-death cycle that comprises mortality.” *This impurity/mortality is diametrically opposed to holiness/life*’ [Gane’s emphasis] (2004, 226–7). See also Maccoby 1999, 49; cf. 31–2, 48, 50, 207–8.

⁵⁹ The comment of Klawans is helpful: ‘if death is defiling (and banned from the sacred) why does killing animals find a central place within the sacred? The answer to the riddle lies, in part, in the fact that the kind of death that occurs in the sanctuary is not a natural kind of death but a highly controlled one’ (2006, 58).

accursed on the cross, as Bultmann states, how was he at the same time able to be a holy sacrifice to God? Bultmann does not appear to give any thought to this.

Bultmann's exegesis on 2 Corinthians 5:21 is also problematic. While Bultmann claims that this statement expresses the idea of substitutionary *offering*, he also asserts that Christ became a *sinner* in the forensic sense. Does God happily accept a sinner as a holy and acceptable offering to himself? Since Bultmann is convinced that Jewish sacrificial notions are of little importance in Paul's soteriology, he seems uninterested in the problems mentioned above.

More fundamentally, if Judaism in Paul's time had little to do with atonement and forgiveness, why was so much emphasis laid on atonement and forgiveness in the alleged pre-Pauline Christianity, which was more Jewish in nature? Ever since E. P. Sanders' groundbreaking work in 1977, Bultmann's reconstruction of late Second Temple Judaism has lost credibility.⁶⁰

(ii) Ernst Käsemann

Käsemann, another prominent figure in German New Testament scholarship, claims that 'long before Paul, theological reflection and the liturgical creeds emphasize the death of Jesus as saving event. The apostle picks up the various variations of this proclamation without giving preference to any one in particular. The idea of the sacrificial death is, if anything, pushed into the background'.⁶¹ Käsemann further insists that Paul 'never definitely called Jesus' death a

⁶⁰ We shall return to Sanders' view in due course.

⁶¹ Käsemann 1971a, 45.

sacrifice’,⁶² and argues, ‘according to I. Cor. 5.7, Jesus is the Paschal lamb slain for us. But in this context the point is not the sacred rite but its result: for Christians, Easter has begun. Even if one does not want to surrender the atonement aspect entirely, the decisive point, at all events, is the ending of our separation from God’.⁶³

Käsemann rigorously attempts to reinforce Bultmann’s argument that Romans 3:24–26a originated in the early Christian liturgical tradition. Bultmann asserts that sacrificial terms, such as *ἱλαστήριον* and *αἷμα*, are characteristically un-Pauline.⁶⁴ Käsemann further argues that there are many more “non-Pauline” terms and motifs in Romans 3:21–26 which are introduced to support the doctrine of justification.⁶⁵ On Romans 3:25, Käsemann thus maintains:

Sie erklärt weiter die Häufung einer zum mindesten für Paulus nicht charakteristischen Terminologie: *πάρεσις*, *προγεγονότα ἁμαρτήματα*, *προτίθεσθαι* im Sinn von manifestieren, *δικαιοσύνη* als göttliche Eigenschaft in V.25, *ἀπολύτρωσις*, als Bezeichnung der bereits erfolgten Erlösung auch in der geprägten Formel 1. Kor. 1,30 und dem liturgischen Text Kol. 1,14 vorkommend, von den durch Bultmann genannten termini abgesehen.⁶⁶

Käsemann’s emphasis of the liturgical character of Paul’s sacrificial language allows him to deprive any theological significance of the fact of Paul’s adoption of sacrificial motifs.⁶⁷ His argument on Romans 3:24–26 has been severely criticised, however. Douglas Campbell notes that some of the alleged non-Pauline terms in Romans 3:25–26b are in fact used elsewhere in

⁶² Ibid., 43.

⁶³ Ibid., 43.

⁶⁴ Bultmann 1970, 49. We shall refute this view in chapter 3.

⁶⁵ Käsemann 1973, 85.

⁶⁶ Käsemann 1964, 96. However, Paul uses the words *προτίθεσθαι* and *ἁμαρτήματα* in Rom 1:13 (cf. Eph 1:9) and 1 Cor 6:18, respectively.

⁶⁷ See also Käsemann’s argument on Paul’s doctrine of “reconciliation”, which manifests his tendency to minimise Jewish sacrificial ideas in Paul’s thought. Cf. Käsemann 1971b, 51-2.

Paul's letters, and *hapax legomena* in this passages are only ἱλαστήριον, πάρεσιν, and προγεγονότων.⁶⁸ Campbell goes on to argue: 'Bearing in mind that the smaller the section the more distorted the ratio, as small a section as 3.25a–26a still only yields a ratio of 3:17 [words], or 17.6%. This is not a particularly high ratio or percentage. Paul's letters average a ratio of 17.4% peculiar vocabulary to total vocabulary, and in Romans the ratio is 26.3%'.⁶⁹ This example suggests how shaky the grounds are, on which Käsemann's argument is constructed. Rather, one may question whether Käsemann's whole argument is predicated on his belief that Paul's soteriology cannot be based on Jewish sacrificial ideas.

(iii) Martin Hengel

Hengel, together with Bultmann and Käsemann, argues that Paul borrowed some 'pre-Pauline' stereotyped formulations in his accounts of Jesus' death, but that Paul 'himself was no longer much concerned with this cultic vocabulary [ἱλαστήριον in Romans 3:25]'.⁷⁰ Hengel states, 'This terminology [the group of words that has the ἱλασκ- root; cf. Heb 2:17; 1John 2:2; 4:10] was more directly related to the atoning sacrificial cult of the Temple than the very Greek-sounding formulae of Paul and –as I would suggest– the Hellenists'.⁷¹ Hengel construes the two sacrificial terms in the epistle to the Romans, ἱλαστήριον and περὶ ἁμαρτίας (Rom 8:3), as referring to 'a vicarious atoning sacrifice'.⁷² He further maintains that the second instance of ἁμαρτίαν in 2 Corinthians 5:21 also signifies the sin offering: 'In II Cor. 5.21, also, the

⁶⁸ Campbell 1992, 54.

⁶⁹ Ibid., 53.

⁷⁰ Hengel 1981, 45.

⁷¹ Ibid., 51.

⁷² Ibid., 45, 46.

statement that as the sinless one Christ was “made sin for us” by God...is to be understood to mean that Christ is offered on our behalf as the perfect sin offering’.⁷³ Concerning the term *πάσχα* in 1 Corinthians 5:7,⁷⁴ Hengel argues that Paul borrowed this term from another pre-Pauline tradition, ‘Another indication of this is the use of the metaphor of the sacrificial lamb without blemish for the crucified and exalted Jesus, which we find attested independently in I Pet 1.19; John 1.29, 35f. and Revelation, and which is also to be presupposed in I Cor. 5.7. Underlying this is probably the interpretation of Jesus as the passover lamb, a reference which goes back to the last meal of Jesus with his disciples’.⁷⁵

As to the reason for Paul’s dependence on pre-Pauline traditions, Hengel suggests: ‘How can Paul—with relatively few exceptions—content himself with formulae and not explain in detail the atoning death of the Messiah “for us”? The reason is probably that the “that” in this formula was in no way controversial, even in Galatia and in the Roman church which was unknown to him’.⁷⁶ According to Hengel, the various terms Paul employs, such as *ἱλαστήριον*, *περὶ ἁμαρτίας*, and *ἁμαρτίαν*, almost always signify the single notion of the “sacrifice for sins”. Unfortunately, Hengel’s analysis of Paul’s usage of sacrificial motifs sheds little light on the theological significance of the diversity and complexity of these motifs.

(v) Assessment of the preceding views

The three scholars mentioned above share the view that Paul’s sacrificial motifs are taken from

⁷³ Ibid., 46. This rendering is, however, unconvincing for the reasons mentioned above.

⁷⁴ ‘Paulus bezeichnet Christus als das „Paschaopfer“ oder „Paschalam“’. Anders als hier kann *πάσχα* auch das Paschafest bezeichnen’ (Artz-Grabner, Kritzer, Papathomas, and Winter 2006, 212). Among these options, it seems that “paschal lamb” is the most plausible. Cf. Exod 12:21 in LXX.

⁷⁵ Hengel 1981, 46.

⁷⁶ Ibid., 54.

the pre-Pauline traditions circulating in the earliest churches. They argue that Paul employs several liturgical traditions simply because these have been widely accepted among the earliest Christian movement. They also presuppose that sacrificial ideas do not lie in the centre of Paul's soteriology.⁷⁷ Given this assumption, it might be futile to attempt to find something unique or significant in Paul's usage of sacrificial terms and ideas. The diversity of these terms may be explained by the variety of pre-Pauline traditions. The crucial weakness of this line of argument is, however, that while it may be true that Paul relies on earliest Christians' shared understandings concerning Jesus' death (cf. 1Cor 15:3; Gal 1:18–19), there is no evidence that the putative pre-Pauline liturgical formulae or confessions were popularly used by other early Christian thinkers and writers. For instance, Peter Stuhlmacher, as regards Romans 3:25–26, postulates that Paul herein uses the Yom Kippur creedal tradition that has been widely known among the churches (3:25–3:26a), and expands it by adding his own justification statement (3:26b).⁷⁸ However, he fails to provide concrete proof of the assumption the alleged “Yom Kippur” creedal tradition had widely been used by the time of Paul. In fact, since there is no reliable source outside the Pauline corpus as to the alleged pre-Pauline liturgical traditions, the *contents* of these traditions reconstructed by these scholars inevitably become a matter of speculation. Nearly half a century ago, Reicke aptly pointed out the problem of the pre-Pauline hypothesis:

However, it is unrealistic to believe that exact separation of pre-Pauline and Pauline

⁷⁷ It must be noted that Peter Stuhlmacher's understanding of Paul's soteriology shows a significant shift from the views of his predecessors, in particular that of Käsemann. Under the strong influence of Hartmut Gese (cf. 1981, 93–116), Stuhlmacher considers that sacrificial ideas are at the heart of Paul's soteriology. Stuhlmacher, on the other hand, follows his predecessors' assumption that Paul's sacrificial language derives from the pre-Pauline traditions circulating among the earliest churches.

⁷⁸ Cf. Stuhlmacher 1989, 55–60.

elements in Paul's epistle is possible. With the exception of clear quotations, no independent documents illustrate precisely which traditions Paul used, beyond a general assumption that preaching, prayers, prophecy, baptism, the Eucharist, catechism, and other church inspired him. Neither can anybody know exactly how much he changed this material. All reconstructions based upon analysis of his sayings will necessarily be a priori statements and depend on the scholar's personal taste. Today the result is also endless disagreement about verses and half-verses, if not mere reproduction of what some renowned scholar has already written about their authenticity or non-authenticity.⁷⁹

Paul may well have produced these statements through his own theological contemplation. Yet, even granting that Paul is largely dependent on the earliest liturgical traditions, this does not mean that he has some difficulties to accept the sacrificial ideas behind these traditions, nor is he ignorant of the significance of sacrificial motifs within Jewish contexts. Moreover, the pre-Pauline hypothesis is often predicated on an unwarranted assumption that Paul is fundamentally hostile to his contemporary Judaism, the view that we cannot endorse any more.

3. 2. 2 "Propitiation" or "Expiation"?

The three scholars reviewed above have exerted a considerable influence on Pauline studies. Nonetheless, they represent only one school of thought. Pauline scholarship is vast and diverse, and there are a number of scholars who put more weight on sacrificial ideas as the crucial element of Paul's soteriology. Still, it would seem that these scholars pay inadequate attention to the variety and complexity of the cultic vocabulary in Paul's soteriological statements. Rather, it is often the case that they concentrate on one particular question, the question of whether the

⁷⁹ Reicke 1968, 41.

purpose of the sin offering is to *propitiate* God's anger or to *expiate* (or "wipe out") sins. Accordingly, some scholars tend to expend enormous energy on the exegesis of one term, ἱλαστήριον in Romans 3:25, which is translated as either a "propitiatory sacrifice" or a "place of atonement".⁸⁰ In what follows, we shall examine two distinguished scholars from the English-speaking world, who take diametrically opposed views on "atonement".

(i) Leon Morris

Morris maintains that a particular view on "blood" lies at the heart of Paul's soteriology:

Now this verse [Leviticus 17:11] is patient of more than one interpretation...it could mean that what is ritually presented to God is the evidence that a death has taken place in accordance with His judgment on sin. For blood *in separation from the flesh* is not life but death...Such a survey shows clearly that the Hebrews understood 'blood' habitually in the sense 'violent death' (much as we do when we speak of 'shedding of blood'), and in the sacrifices the most probable meaning is not 'life' but 'life yielded up in death'. And this is surely Paul's meaning.⁸¹

Morris asserts that the purpose of the blood sacrifice is to show the death of the victim as the evidence that God's wrathful, righteous judgement is meted out on the sacrificial victim on behalf of the offerer. He goes on to state: 'Such passages [1Thess 5:9–10; Rom 5:9] linking the death of Christ with salvation from wrath seem to indicate that Christ's death represents a

⁸⁰ E.g., Ridderbos 1977, 187.

⁸¹ Morris 1965, 219 [Morris' italics]. Morris claims: '[I]t is clear that the commonest use of *dam* is to denote death by violence, and, in particular, that this use is found above twice as often as that to denote the blood of sacrifice [in the Hebrew Bible]. There is a difference also in distribution, for the blood of the sacrifice is often mentioned in Leviticus and Exodus...but rarely elsewhere, there being only twenty-five references to sacrificial blood in all the rest of the Old Testament. By contrast the use of blood to denote violent death is not specially located in any part of the Old Testament, and is found almost throughout. As far as it goes, then, the statistical evidence seems to indicate that the association most likely to be conjured up when the Hebrews heard the word "blood" used was that of violent death' (1955, 109-10).

bearing of the divine wrath. Despite the hesitation of some, this must be accepted as the teaching of Paul'.⁸² In Morris' view, the noun ἱλαστήριον in Romans 3:25 is the microcosm that condenses Paul's salvific thought: 'It seems clear that the word is understood to signify "means of propitiation" or "propitiatory thing"'.⁸³ Morris persistently resists rendering this word as the "mercy seat", and maintains: 'In the first place the almost invariable habit of the translators of the Old Testament into Greek was to use the article, the only exception being in the first place where the word occurs, and there it is not alone, but in company with ἐπίθεμα [Exod 25:17 in LXX]'.⁸⁴ He continues: 'I do not see how the conclusion is to be avoided that, even on LXX premises, anarthrous ἱλαστήριον does not necessarily denote the mercy-seat. The word itself means "propitiatory", and if the mercy-seat could be so designated, so also could one of the ledges on Ezekiel's altar (or even Noah's ark, according to Symmachus)'.⁸⁵

As regards 2 Corinthians 5:21, Morris writes: "'Made sin" is not a very usual expression, but I should have thought that it is fairly plain that it means "treated as a sinner", or "made to bear penalty of sin" or the like'.⁸⁶ Concerning Galatians 3:13, he claims: 'Just as the previous passage [2Cor 5:21] we were examining spoke of God as making Christ "sin", so this speaks of Christ becoming a "curse"...His meaning [in Gal 3:10] then is that men have not kept the law of God. Therefore they stand under a curse. But Christ became a curse for them. He bore the curse that they should have borne. He died their death'.⁸⁷ In the following, we shall examine the validity of Morris' construction.

⁸² Ibid., 225.

⁸³ Morris 1988, 182.

⁸⁴ Morris 1956, 35.

⁸⁵ Ibid., 36.

⁸⁶ Morris 1965, 221.

⁸⁷ Ibid., 222.

First of all, Morris' understanding of sacrificial practices simply misses the mark. Although he asserts that 'the statistical evidence seems to indicate that the association most likely to be conjured up when the Hebrews heard the word "blood" used was that of violent death',⁸⁸ his statistical methodology is faulty, as it includes a large number of biblical passages that are *not* in a sacrificial context. His theory that "blood *in separation from the flesh* is not life but death" contradicts the biblical injunction of blood-consumption (cf. Gen 9:4; Deut 12:23). Blood-consumption is prohibited because blood is the bearer of life rather than death, irrespective of its attachment to the flesh. Moreover, his particular view on the role of blood in the sin offering is in conflict with the biblical concern for the holiness of God. Death is the exact opposite of the holiness of God, and something that is directly associated with death (e.g., a corpse) poses a serious threat to the holiness of God.⁸⁹ Given, therefore, that one of the crucial concerns of the sacrificial system is to safeguard the holiness of God from death (cf. Num 19:1–22), how can one present something that represents death (in Morris's view, the "blood" of the victim) to God? In Morris' construction, the aim of the blood sacrifice is reduced to the punishment for sins, which propitiates God's wrath. However, even if the offender or his substitute is duly punished, this alone does not sufficiently deal with the problems caused by sins. From the biblical viewpoint, the peril of sins lies in the fact that sins generate corruptibility, pollution, and mortality, which would bring and spread death to God's creation (cf. Gen 3:14–19; Lev 18:24–25; Rom 6:23).⁹⁰

Next, although Morris' entire argument relies fundamentally on the philologically

⁸⁸ Morris 1955, 110.

⁸⁹ E.g., Num 19:13.

⁹⁰ We shall discuss this issue fully in chapter 2,3.3.3.

disputable rendering of the term ἱλαστήριον as a “means of propitiation”, Bailey criticises this rendering:

[I]t is commonly assumed that a ἱλαστήριον in the ancient world must have been something that could shed its blood, i.e. a sacrificial *victim* (‘sacrifice of atonement’, NIV; NRSV). This, too, fits the immediate context. But it is a false syllogism, since it assumes that the meaning of ἱλαστήριον can be determined by the meaning of “blood”, and is moreover supported by no external evidence: ἱλαστήριον never denotes an animal victim in any known source.⁹¹

Finlan further comments: ‘ἱλαστήριον is a LXX neologism signifying the place where the action of ἱλάσκομαι is done, just as θυσιαστήριον (altar) is the place where one can θύω or θυσιάζω (offer sacrifice) and φυγαδευτήριον is a place where one can φεύγω (flee; thus, a city of refuge). Most words ending –τήριον designate *places*’.⁹² Hence, we cannot exclude the possibility that ἱλαστήριον means a “place of atonement”. Moreover, although Morris contends that the anathorous usage of ἱλαστήριον in Romans 3:25 makes it difficult to render it as the “mercy seat”, this is gratuitous. As Finlan strongly argues:

To clarify: a predicate accusative is a predicate (complement) of a direct object. An example in English would be: I appointed him *leader*. “Him” is the direct object, and “leader” is its complement. More examples include: You made Israel *a special people*. He considered my remark *agreement* with his position. I made him *a winner*. Each of the direct objects here have [sic] predicate accusatives (in italics), and the latter can occur with or without the article in English. But in Greek, the rule is that predicate accusatives are anarthrous.⁹³

⁹¹ Bailey 2000, 156 [Bailey’s emphasis]. Cf. Kraus 1991.

⁹² Finlan 2004, 128 [Finlan’s emphasis].

⁹³ Finlan 2004, 132.

In the light of their arguments, at least from the philological viewpoint, ἱλαστήριον is more likely to be rendered as the “mercy seat”.

Morris maintains that Romans 3:25, 2 Corinthians 5:21, and Galatians 3:13 basically express the same idea, that is, Christ suffered the punishment as the substitute of sinners. This is, however, overly reductionistic, as our study will show.

(ii) James D. G. Dunn

James Dunn, one of the leading proponents of the so-called “New Perspective on Paul”, also emphasises the Jewish sacrificial character of Paul’s soteriology: ‘One of the most powerful images used by Paul to explicate the significance of Christ’s death is that of the cultic sacrifice, or more precisely the “sin offering” which could be offered up by individuals or groups in the Jerusalem temple (Leviticus 4) and the annual Day of Atonement sacrifices (Lev. 16.11–19)’.⁹⁴ Dunn contends that the aim of Jewish sacrifices is neither propitiation nor appeasement of God’s wrath:

[As to *exilaskomai* and *kipper*], Hebrew usage contrasts markedly with common Greek usage on this precise point. Characteristically in Greek usage the human being is the active subject and God is the object: the human action propitiates God. But in Hebrew usage God is never the object of the verb (*kipper*). Properly speaking, in the Israelite cult, God is never “propitiated” or “appeased.” The object of the atoning act is rather the removal of sin – that is, either by purifying the person or object, or by wiping out the sin. Atonement is characteristically made “for” a person or “for sin”. And it can be said that it is God himself who expiates the sin (or for the sin).⁹⁵

⁹⁴ Dunn 1998, 212.

⁹⁵ Ibid., 214. Cf. Barrett 1957, 77. It seems that the classical view of C. H. Dodd still exerts a considerable influence on British scholars. Cf. Dodd 1935, 82-95.

Dunn maintains that, behind almost all the salvific statements in Paul's letters, there stands the concept of "sin offering". As regards the question of how the sin offering achieves the removal of sin, Dunn advocates a distinctive theory: 'The manner in which the sin-offering dealt with sin was by its death. The sacrificial animal, identified with the offerer in his sin, had to be destroyed in order to destroy the sin which it embodied. The sprinkling, smearing and pouring away of the sacrificial blood in the sight of God indicated that the life was wholly destroyed, and with it the sin of the sinner'.⁹⁶ Dunn further argues that the purity of the sacrificial animal is conversely transferred to the offerer: 'As the sin was transferred one way, bringing death to the sacrificial animal, so its purity and ongoing life were in effect transferred in reverse'.⁹⁷ Dunn claims that 2 Corinthians 5:21 is the best example of this "exchange": 'The antithesis "sinless/made sin" makes it difficult to doubt that Paul had in mind the cult's insistence on clean and unblemished animals for sacrifice. The allusion is not so much to the sin offering as such, but to the function of the sin offering—"made sin," not *peri hamartias* (as in Rom. 8.3). A more specific allusion to the Day of Atonement's scapegoat is likely (Lev. 16.21)'.⁹⁸ Concerning 1 Corinthians 5:7, Dunn contends:

Paul explicitly states, "Christ, our paschal lamb, has been sacrificed." This is rather striking, since the Passover lamb was not strictly speaking a sacrifice. However, the Passover is already associated with atonement in Ezek. 45.18–22. And this link was probably already forged in the double association of the Last Supper with the Passover and with Jesus' "blood poured out (*ekchunnomenon*) for many" (Mark 14.24 pars.). There the language is unavoidably sacrificial and signifies atonement...Paul's language

⁹⁶ Dunn 1991a, 46.

⁹⁷ Dunn 1998, 222.

⁹⁸ Ibid., 217.

here suggests that the same evolution of imagery was already well advanced in his theology.⁹⁹

With regard to the epistle to the Romans, Dunn argues that the phrase *περὶ ἁμαρτίας* in 8:3 refers to the sin offering,¹⁰⁰ and as to the controversial term *ἱλαστήριον* in 3:25, Dunn opines that it could mean either the “mercy seat (place of atonement)” or the atoning sacrifice, and further maintains: ‘Paul certainly has [the Day of Atonement ritual] in mind here’.¹⁰¹ In what follows, we shall evaluate Dunn’s arguments.

First, concerning Dunn’s understanding of the purpose of the sin offering, it is difficult to deny the element of appeasement in the sacrificial offering for sins, since it is the biblical idea that the sins of the people provoke God to wrath (e.g., Exod 32:11; Deut 9:7; 2 Chr 34:25). Moreover, as Paul repeatedly refers to the wrath of God in Romans (Rom 1:18; 2:5, 8; 3:5; 4:15; 5:9), it is hardly convincing to deny a connotation of the appeasement of God’s wrath in Paul’s statement of Romans 3:25.

Next, although Dunn writes that ‘the Passover lamb was not strictly speaking a sacrifice’, Exodus 12:27 clearly states: “it is the passover sacrifice [cf. *פֶּסַח* in the Masoretic text (MT); *Θυσία* in LXX] to the Lord, for he passed over the houses of the Israelites in Egypt, when he struck down the Egyptians but spared our houses” (cf. Deut 16:2). It seems, rather, that Dunn’s real question is whether the Passover lamb was considered as *a sacrifice for sins* in the time of Paul. Dunn quotes Ezekiel 45 as the evidence that the Passover was associated with a sacrifice for sins in the Second Temple era (cf. Ezek 45:21–22). In the Pentateuch, however, there is the

⁹⁹ Ibid., 216–7.

¹⁰⁰ Ibid., 216.

¹⁰¹ Dunn 1988, 172, 180.

instruction to offer in the Passover feast the sacrifice for sins, which is clearly distinguishable from the sacrifice of the paschal lamb (Num 28:22). Thus, the instruction in Ezekiel 45:22 does not prove that the paschal lamb was conflated with the sin offering in the Second Temple period. Incidentally, it is not a lamb but a bull that is to be offered in this case.¹⁰²

By referring to Mark 14:24, Dunn further attempts to defend his case that the paschal lamb was identified as a sacrifice for sins among the earliest churches. This point comes close to the mark. All the Gospels attest that the crucifixion of Jesus occurred around the time of the Passover feast, although there is a critical discrepancy concerning the exact moment of the execution between the Synoptic Gospels and John's Gospel (cf. Matt 26:17–19; Mark 14:16; Luke 22:7–16; John 18:39; 19:14).¹⁰³ In particular, in John's Gospel, although it is hotly debated whether Jesus' designation by John the Baptist in John 1:29 (*the Lamb of God* who takes away the sin of the world) could be interpreted as a paschal lamb,¹⁰⁴ in light of an allusion to a paschal lamb in the description of Jesus' crucifixion (John 19:36; cf. Exod 12:46; Num 9:12), it is arguably claimed that John the Evangelist 'portrays the death of Jesus in terms of the paschal [sic] victim'.¹⁰⁵ It might have been the case that early Christians contrived the distinctive idea, namely, the lamb of God as the sacrifice for sins.¹⁰⁶ Therefore, while it is doubtful that

¹⁰² In the rabbinic literature, incidentally, there is evidence that the paschal lamb is viewed as an atoning sacrifice. In *Sifre on Deuteronomy*, it is thus written: 'Since sacrificing is merely part of the entire matter, why was it singled out? To serve as a basis for analogical deduction: *since sacrificing is characterized by being indispensable for expiation*, anything else indispensable for expiation is also included' (*Sifre D.* 129).

¹⁰³ As to the chronological discrepancy between the Synoptic Gospels and John's Gospel, see, e.g., Goudeever 1961, 224.

¹⁰⁴ This is because 'an expiatory function of the paschal lamb is highly controversial' (Stökl Ben Ezra 2003, 177). We shall return to this issue in what follows.

¹⁰⁵ Wheaton 2009, 64. Wheaton further argues that 'the significance of the sacrifice of Jesus as the paschal victim lies...not in any atoning value intrinsic to the sacrifice itself but rather in its function as provision for the all-important paschal meal' (Ibid. 59).

¹⁰⁶ Cf. 1Pet 1:19; Rev 5:6–14. In this connection, Bauckham suggests that 'it is likely that in Revelation 5:6, 9 John alludes not only to the Passover lamb, but also to Isaiah 53:7, where the Suffering Servant is

most first century Jews regarded the paschal lamb as a sacrifice for sins, Dunn may be correct in maintaining that some of early Christians developed the image of paschal lamb as a sacrifice for sins.¹⁰⁷

What is more problematic in Dunn's argument is his confusion of the blood-sacrificial offerings with the scapegoat. Dunn asserts that the destruction of the animal, to which the sins of the offerer are transferred, accomplishes the removal of sin. If this is true, however, how can we understand the case of the scapegoat, to which all the sins of Israel are to be transferred? Contrary to Dunn's theory, the scapegoat must not be killed (at least within the Temple precinct), since its role is to be the vehicle that carries away the sins of all the people into the wilderness.¹⁰⁸ Moreover, in Dunn's construction, the purpose of the scapegoat ritual becomes contradictory, or at least redundant, in relation to that of the blood-sacrificial ritual conducted in the Temple. That is to say, if the sins of Israel can be destroyed by means of slaughtering the goat, for what reason must another goat carry away the sins of Israel into the wilderness, given that the sins have already been destroyed? Indeed, Dunn's theory destroys the unity and rationale of the Yom Kippur rite.¹⁰⁹ Dunn makes a common mistake of confusing the blood sacrifice with the non-blood scapegoat ritual.¹¹⁰

portrayed as a sacrificial lamb' (1993, 71).

¹⁰⁷ We do not, however, consider that Paul, in 1 Corinthians 5:7, identifies the paschal lamb as a sacrifice for sins. We shall discuss this point in depth in chapter 3.

¹⁰⁸ According to the Mishnah, the scapegoat was pushed from a cliff (m. *Yoma* 6.6). Even supposing that this report is true, it does not mean that Jews attempted to attain atonement through the death of the scapegoat. Rather, they would simply have eliminated the danger of its returning to the city of Jerusalem, which would jeopardise the removal of sins from the holy city. Cf. Milgrom 1991, 1045; m. *Yoma* 6.8.

¹⁰⁹ See our discussion in chapter 2,3.3.5.

¹¹⁰ A similar mistake can be found in the works of other scholars. For instance, Schoeps states 'When Paul answers this question with 2Cor. 5:21: God has made Christ to be sin and in Him has reconciled the world unto Himself (v.19) the expression cannot be understood otherwise than as an allusion to the laying of the hand on the animal (סמיכה) prescribed in Ex. 29:10 (סמר) as a result of which *the sacrificial animal is laden with the sins of the sacrificer and is to become a "body of sin" through the transference of guilt*' (1961, 132 [my emphasis]). We shall consider the meaning of the laying of *one* hand on the

3. 2. 3 Summary

In the previous sections, we reviewed the two prominent Pauline scholars who consider sacrificial ideas as critically important in Paul's soteriology. They disagree, however, with each other with respect to the question of whether the concept of *atonement* signifies "propitiation" or "expiation". This is unfortunate, since, as we shall see in the next chapter, the notion of "atonement" contains both propitiatory and expiatory elements.

Besides this point, their arguments often betray misconceptions, such as the confusion of the scapegoat with the blood sacrifice. What is more problematic is that both Morris and Dunn assert that atonement is directly achieved by the *death* of the sacrifice.¹¹¹ It appears that their errors are rooted in a misunderstanding of sacrificial practices and their purposes. The same would hold true for the German scholars examined above. To be sure, those scholars selected above do not represent the entirety of Pauline scholarship. Nevertheless, given the considerable influence of each scholar, their views exhibit dominant tendencies in Pauline scholarship. This situation has, however, been dramatically improved by the works of the scholars who are sensitive and careful to distinguish the varying natures and purposes of sacrificial practices. We now turn to these scholars' works.

animal in the next chapter. Stuhlmacher also writes 'According to 2 Corinthians 5:21, God himself made his Son the sin offering for believers; that is, he identified the blameless Christ with the sinners, let him bear their iniquities, suffer death and gain eternal life vicariously for them' (2001, 59, n.4). Stuhlmacher elsewhere maintains that Romans 3:25 and 2 Corinthians 5:21 express basically the same soteriological view (cf. 1989, 110), which betrays that he also confuses the blood sacrifice with the non-blood ritual of scapegoat.

¹¹¹ We shall fully discuss this point in the next chapter.

3. 3 W. D. Davies

3. 3. 1 The “new Exodus” soteriology

Whilst somewhat dated, Davies’ monumental work, *Paul and Rabbinic Judaism*, is still important.¹¹² Davies contends that at the heart of Paul’s soteriology is the conviction that the Christ event is the new Exodus event: ‘he [Paul] obviously regards the great deliverance at the Exodus and its accompaniments as the prototype of the mighty act of God in Christ’.¹¹³ He argues that the idea of “redemption” in Paul’s letters (ἀπολύτρωσις; Rom 3:24; 1Cor 1:30) should be understood against this Exodus backdrop:

Paul, then, in applying the term “redemption” to the work of Jesus Christ had a long tradition behind him [e.g., Exod 6:6; 15:13; Ps 77:15; Isa 41:14]. Just as Israel had been redeemed from Egypt, so the Christian community, the New Israel, had been redeemed, “rescued,” from bondage in the “Egypt” of sin. True, Paul does not use the term “redemption” frequently, but the idea of a New Exodus pervades his thought.¹¹⁴

Davies further maintains that Paul considers the new Exodus as the covenant-making event: ‘The Pauline account of the Eucharist, as we saw, presents the Death of Jesus as the inauguration of a New Covenant, and in our treatment of Paul’s thought throughout the preceding chapters this concept has again and again emerged’.¹¹⁵ The Last Supper as the Passover event ‘should be regarded by him [Paul] as the inauguration of the New Covenant that was to be contrasted with the old, this New Covenant being ratified in the blood of Jesus, and it

¹¹² The first edition was published in 1948.

¹¹³ Davies 1980 [1948], 105.

¹¹⁴ Davies 1967, 313-4.

¹¹⁵ Davies 1980 [1948], 260.

is this aspect of the Death of Jesus that appears in his account of the Eucharist as central to Paul'.¹¹⁶ Davies stresses that at the centre of Paul's understanding of Jesus' death lies the covenant-making that had given birth to the New Community.¹¹⁷

In this connection, although Davies often uses the term "old Israel",¹¹⁸ he upholds the importance of the salvation-historical view in Paul's thinking. Indeed, he himself raises a question on this point: 'Since those who believe in Jesus as the Messiah or those who are "in Christ" now constitute "Israel", the people of God, what was the relationship between them and the Jews, Israel after the flesh, in their continuity and discontinuity?'¹¹⁹ Davies emphatically claims that Israel "after the flesh" still remains in God's scope of salvation:

Paul is concerned to respect two things: the eschatological hope of the gospel and the historical role of the Jewish people in the past and the preservation of that role in the future, within the larger context of the epistle [to the Romans]. Both of these are tied up with the faithfulness of God to his promise. This is far removed from anything that can be called anti-Judaism, not to speak of anti-Semitism.¹²⁰

Davies further claims: 'In interpreting Jesus as the Christ [i.e., the Messiah of Israel], *Paul placed him within the framework, indeed at the high point, of salvation-history*, which in varying degrees was the concern not simply of circles given to apocalyptic speculation but of all significant currents in Judaism'.¹²¹ This is exactly the point that we attempt to defend as the essence of Paul's soteriology.

¹¹⁶ Ibid., 251.

¹¹⁷ Cf. Ibid., 253.

¹¹⁸ E.g., Davies 1977, 5; 1980 [1948] 252.

¹¹⁹ Davies 1977, 5.

¹²⁰ Ibid., 29.

¹²¹ Ibid., 5 [my italics].

3. 3. 2 Sacrificial ideas in Paul's soteriology

While Davies puts much emphasis on the significance of the Passover motif against the Exodus backdrop, he does not downplay the importance of the idea of the sacrifice for sins in Paul's soteriology. He refutes the popular scholarly view that "the blood (of Christ)" in the Pauline vocabulary is merely a metonym for the death of Christ itself or the salvific effect of the death of Christ,¹²² and stresses *the centrality of "blood" in Jewish sacrificial practices*:

It is now pertinent to add that in all sacrificial activity it was the blood that was central...By outpouring of blood life was released, and in offering this to God the worshipper believed that the estrangement between him and the Deity was annulled, or that the defilement which separated them was cleansed...The sprinkling was the act of "atonement" and was thus reserved for the priest.¹²³

Davies contends that the word "blood" strongly carries such a sacrificial connotation in Romans 3:25 and 5:9 alike.¹²⁴ Davies further argues that Paul, in Romans 3:25, alludes to the Yom Kippur sacrifice, and gives a favourable comment on Manson's view that ἱλαστήριον here signifies a new "place of atonement".¹²⁵ Davies, however, does not further explore how the theme of Passover/Exodus might be related to that of Yom Kippur in Paul's soterological thought.

3. 3. 3 Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology

Davies points out that the suffering servant in Isaiah 53 constitutes another crucial background

¹²² Cf. Behm, "αἷμα, αἵματεχυσία," *TDNT* 1:172-7. We shall discuss this point in depth in chapter 3,3.2.

¹²³ Davies, *ibid.*, 235-6.

¹²⁴ *Ibid.*, 230-7.

¹²⁵ *Ibid.*, 240. Davies, however, disagrees with Manson's proposal that Romans 1-3 as a whole is structured on the ritual order of Yom Kippur (*Ibid.*, 242). Cf. T. W. Manson 1945, 6-7.

for Paul's soteriology, and suggests that 'the assumption is at least possible that the conception of a Suffering Messiah was not unfamiliar to pre-Christian Judaism'.¹²⁶ However, while Davies stresses the importance of the Exodus theme in Paul's soteriology, he fails to mention that Isaiah 40–55 itself is deeply saturated with the new Exodus theme. The Isaianic suffering servant is depicted as the agent who brings about not only the new Exodus, but also the new creation, which might have greatly inspired Paul's understanding of the Christ event.

Concerning a peculiar expression that Christ became sin or a curse, Davies comments: 'We have been unable to find any material on the Rabbinic side to illuminate the concepts of Christ as a "curse" and as "sin", and we must therefore here be content with seeing in these two concepts the strongest possible expression of Christ's suffering on our behalf wrung out of Paul's heart by the contemplation of Christ crucified'.¹²⁷ Again, it is important to note that Isaiah 53 is an exceptional text within the entire Jewish scriptures that expresses the idea of "vicarious death" on behalf of the people. Moreover, as Davies stresses, the Exodus of the Adamic humanity from the power of sin is certainly important in Paul's soteriology. Nonetheless, the new Exodus of the broken covenant people (i.e., Jews) from the curse of the law (i.e., exile) envisaged by Deutero-Isaiah might be equally significant in Paul's thought.¹²⁸ These two Exodus themes might have tightly been locked together in Paul's covenantal and apocalyptic thinking. Therefore, it would be a worthwhile attempt to consider a potential Isaianic backdrop of the theme of Christ's becoming a curse.¹²⁹

¹²⁶ Davies, *ibid.*, 283. On this point, though, Hengel cautiously comments: 'So far, then, we have no clear text from pre-Christian Judaism which speaks of the vicarious suffering of the Messiah in connection with Isa. 53' (1981, 59).

¹²⁷ *Ibid.*, 284.

¹²⁸ This point will be discussed in chapter 5,2.3.4.

¹²⁹ We shall explore this point in chapter 5.

In sum, we have a high regard for Davies' valuable contribution for stressing the importance of the Passover/Exodus event as the covenant-making event in Paul's soteriology. He also sheds light on the centrality of "blood" in Jewish sacrificial practices and its significance in Paul's atonement theology. However, there remain some issues to be explored, such as the relationship between the Exodus theme and Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology, and the relationship between Passover/Exodus and Yom Kippur. The present study attempts to provide more detailed considerations on such issues.

3. 4 E. P. Sanders

3. 4. 1 Sacrifice within "covenantal nomism"

In his epoch-making study, *Paul and Palestinian Judaism*, E. P. Sanders has decisively changed the landscape of Pauline scholarship.¹³⁰ Much has already been written on this revolutionary work, and it is well beyond the scope of our research to evaluate Sanders' whole picture of Palestinian Judaism in Paul's time. Here, we shall focus on his account of the Levitical sacrificial system and its significance for first century Jews. The edge of Sanders' argument lies in the fact that he discusses the role of sacrificial practices within the framework of the "covenant":

The 'pattern' or 'structure' of covenantal nomism is this: (1) God has chosen Israel and (2) given the law. The law implies both (3) God's promise to maintain the election and (4) the requirement to obey. (5) God rewards obedience and punishes transgression. (6) *The law provides for means of atonement, and atonement results in (7) maintenance or*

¹³⁰ Sanders 1977.

re-establishment of the covenantal relationship. (8) All those who are maintained in the covenant by obedience, atonement and God's mercy belong to the group which will be saved. An important interpretation of the first and last points is that election and ultimately salvation are considered to be by God's mercy rather than human achievement.¹³¹

The point is that, within the structure of covenantal nomism, the covenant and its law presuppose human frailty, and provide sacrifice beforehand as the means of remedy for those who breach the covenantal law. In fact, various remedial actions are stipulated, mainly in the book of Leviticus. This way of understanding the nature of the law within the covenantal framework potentially calls for a radical reappraisal of the traditional reading of Paul's letters, not least Galatians and Romans. As an exemplary case, Galatians 3:10–14 is often construed on a tacit assumption as follows: Paul holds a particular belief that the fulfilment of the law is *impossible*, since the law demands absolute, perfect observance without margin for error. As Bultmann maintains, 'A Jew would contradict Paul's assertion that a man can be justified only on the basis of absolutely perfect keeping of the Law'.¹³² Bultmann also claims that no human can meet the absolute demand of the law: '*existence under the Law*, under the divine demand, is understood as *the presupposition for the existence under grace*. Only he who knows himself to be limited by God's demand, who is awake to the fact that he never does and never can satisfy this demand, only this man can understand the preaching of the Gospel'.¹³³ The crucial

¹³¹ Ibid., 422 [my emphasis]. Concerning point (8), Simon Gathercole demonstrates: 'Final judgment on the basis of works permeates Jewish theology, Qumran included' (2002, 111). Sanders would concede this point, as he states, 'the basic distinction holds: getting in is purely a result of God's grace; he must judge the deeds of those whom he has chosen, since to do otherwise would be capricious. Paul seems to share this view entirely' (1983, 106). Cf. Rom 2:13.

¹³² Bultmann 1952, 263. See also Westerholm 2004, 375, n.66.

¹³³ Bultmann 1964, 14 [Bultmann's emphasis]. We shall fully criticise such a reading of Galatians in chapter 5.

weakness of Bultmann's argument lies in the fact that the Mosaic law does not demand sinless perfectionism, as evidenced by its sacrificial provision. Paul's statement, however, gives the impression that he ignores the Jewish idea of atonement and forgiveness. What exactly is Paul's intention?

In this regard, Sanders' view can be encapsulated in one sentence: 'In short, *this is what Paul finds wrong in Judaism: it is not Christianity*'.¹³⁴ Sanders also argue, '*Paul in fact explicitly denies that the Jewish covenant can be effective for salvation, thus consciously denying the basis of Judaism*'.¹³⁵ How could Paul come to the conclusion that the Jewish covenant, and thus its sacrificial means, was ineffective for salvation? According to Sanders, Paul has come to believe that after the coming of Christ, all mankind are divided into the two groups: 'those who believe and those who do not believe',¹³⁶ or those who are "in Christ" and those who are not.¹³⁷ Because of the introduction of this absolutely new category, everything that belonged to the age before Christ becomes irrelevant to salvation. Even the Jewish covenant(s) cannot be the exception. The Jewish notion of atonement is thus not at the heart of Paul's soteriology.¹³⁸ Therefore, argues Sanders, when Paul adopts the sacrificial terms in his accounts of Jesus' death, he merely repeats the pre-Pauline formulae without hesitation.¹³⁹ Likewise, on Galatians 3:13, Sanders comments thus: 'The argument sketched above makes the

¹³⁴ Sanders 1977, 552 [Sanders' emphasis].

¹³⁵ Ibid., 551 [Sanders' emphasis].

¹³⁶ Ibid., 509.

¹³⁷ Ibid., 453-63.

¹³⁸ Cf. *ibid.*, 467. In a similar vein, Moo argues that Paul presupposes that the sacrificial provision in the Mosaic covenant becomes invalid after the cross (2013, 204-5). If this is the case, Paul would also have believed that the Mosaic covenant itself becomes obsolete (cf. Heb 8:13). As a corollary, the Mosaic curse loses its binding force as well, since sacrifice and curse are essential components of the Mosaic covenant. Hence, there is no ground for asserting that those who observe the Mosaic law shall be cursed.

¹³⁹ Cf. *ibid.*, 463.

substitutionary view of Christ's death central. It is, I think, generally conceded that, while Paul repeats that view, it is not the one most characteristic of his thought. Thus Christ's death as taking on the curse of the law is not likely to be the key understanding behind Paul's view'.¹⁴⁰

Sanders' assertion, however, contradicts what Paul strongly affirms in Romans 11:28–29: “As regards the gospel they are enemies of God for your sake; but as regards election they are beloved, for the sake of their ancestors; for the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable”. Although Paul harshly remarks on the Mosaic covenant and its law (cf. 2Cor 3:4–18; Gal 5:2–4), he nevertheless strenuously defends the irrevocability of the election and covenantal status of Jews. Nor does Paul state that Jews should not observe the Mosaic law (cf. Rom 14:1–23; 1Cor 9:20). Sanders' argument does not do justice to the force of Paul's statements. Given that Paul sees Jews' election as irrevocable, however, there still remains the problem of why Paul seems to ignore the ideas of forgiveness and atonement in Judaism.

In this regard, James Scott provides a more convincing account. Scott argues that the Levitical sacrificial system is effective *on the condition that the covenant is effective*. However, once the covenant is broken, the sacrificial means cease to be in effect. In fact, the brokenness of the covenant inevitably entails the loss of the sanctuary, which makes impossible for the covenant people to offer sacrifices (cf. Ps 78:60; Isa 63:18; Lam 2:7). Hence, the sacrificial means are not capable of *restoring* the broken covenant, and the people under the broken covenant must be kept in a state of covenantal curse. In the time of Paul, the Temple and its cultus had long been restored, and most Jews who observed the sacrificial practices would have believed the effectiveness of their practices. Still, as will be discussed in due course, there is

¹⁴⁰ Sanders 1983, 25.

evidence that not a few Jews felt that they were still under the covenantal curse, evidenced by their perennial subjugation to ungodly Gentile powers. Scott criticises Sanders' view thus:

It is unfortunate that Sanders's notion of covenantal nomism has so stressed continuity in the covenantal relationship between God and his people, and readily available atonement for sin by means of repentance, that texts on the exile which, like Daniel 9, emphasize prolonged discontinuity as punishment for sin, have gone practically unnoticed or have been labelled aberrant. There is in fact a number of other Old Testament and Jewish texts which tend to call into question Sanders's business-as-usual concept of covenant nomism. The extensive penitential prayer tradition based on Dan. 9.4–19 and Deuteronomy 27–32 shows that the state of curse and exile was felt to continue throughout the Second Temple period and beyond.¹⁴¹

Sanders' explanation of the role of sacrifice within the covenant is indeed helpful, but he seems not to take full account of the historical situation of the covenant people in the first century CE.¹⁴²

3. 4. 2 Sanders' participationist eschatology

Having reviewed Sanders' argument for covenantal nomism in relation to Paul's understanding of sacrifice, we now consider Sanders' distinctive view of Paul's soteriology. Sanders insists that Paul's thought does not develop smoothly from the Jewish pattern of covenantal nomism, as he states: 'the primary reason for which it is inadequate to depict Paul's religion as a new covenantal nomism is that that term does not take account of his participationist transfer terms,

¹⁴¹ Scott 1993b, 201-2. We shall fully evaluate Scott's view in chapter 5.

¹⁴² Cf. N. T. Wright 2013a, 750. Incidentally, Sanders provides a more detailed description of sacrifices (1992, 103-118), but does not explore further the relationship between sacrifices and the covenant.

which are the most significant terms for understanding his soteriology'.¹⁴³ Sanders claims that Paul's soteriology is based on the so-called "participationist eschatology", as he explains: 'The basic insight was that the believer becomes one with Christ Jesus and that this effects a transfer of lordship and the beginning of a transformation which will be completed with the coming of the Lord'.¹⁴⁴ Sanders thus rejects the "new Exodus" soteriology advocated by W. D. Davies.¹⁴⁵

It must be stressed, however, that the idea of the transfer of lordship is also crucial in the Exodus narrative. As Milgrom explains, 'the legal aspect of redemption operates in the Exodus: God owns Israel because he is their [אֱלֹהִים: "kinsman" or "redeemer"]'. Freedom means solely a change of masters; henceforth, the Israelites are slaves of God'.¹⁴⁶ Hence, the concept of "transfer" in Paul's thought can comport with the Exodus context. Sanders maintains that "freedom" is one of the key features of Paul's soteriological thought: 'It agrees with the view that the death of Christ provides for a transfer of lordship that Paul can express the transfer in terms of liberation or freedom from bondage. One is free from the power of sin (or the law) and free to live for God'.¹⁴⁷ Again, the celebration of "freedom" attained through the Exodus event was the keynote of the Passover feast the people observed in the late Second Temple period, as we shall see in the next chapter. Furthermore, the notion of "participation" was also characteristic of the Passover feast, through which first century Jews participated in the decisive salvific event in the past.

Admittedly, the theme of "transformation" is largely absent in the Exodus narrative. The

¹⁴³ Sanders 1977, 514.

¹⁴⁴ Ibid., 549. See also 467-8.

¹⁴⁵ Cf. Ibid., 511-5.

¹⁴⁶ Milgrom 2001, 2226.

¹⁴⁷ Sanders 1977, 468.

Israelites in the wilderness still remained a stiff-necked people (e.g., Deut 9:6). However, this is precisely the point of discontinuity between the Mosaic and renewed covenants. It is the “Spirit” that transforms God’s people from within, which was missing in the Mosaic covenant (cf. Isa 59:21; Rom 8:4). Indeed, the outpouring of the Spirit is one of the central features of the new Exodus in Jewish eschatological expectations.¹⁴⁸ Hence, Sanders’ participatory soteriology does not necessarily contradict a new Exodus soteriology.

In sum, as stated above, Sanders’ argument on the relationship between the sacrificial system and the covenant is indeed illuminating. However, we do not concur with his assertion that neither the covenant nor the Exodus theme is essential in Paul’s soteriology.

4. 5 Michael Newton

3. 5. 1 The issue of “purity” in Paul’s theology

In his *The Concept of Purity at Qumran and in the letters of Paul*, published in 1985, Michael Newton brings the issue of “purity” into the study of Paul’s soteriology. His study anticipates the growing interest among scholars in the relationship between “sin” and “impurity” in the Second Temple era. Indeed, this has become a flourishing area of research in the interdisciplinary field of ancient Judeo-Christian studies.¹⁴⁹ He closely examines the texts of the Dead Sea Scrolls, and maintains:

The Dead Sea Scrolls show without a doubt that an examination of the concept of purity

¹⁴⁸ See our discussion in chapter 5,2.4.3.

¹⁴⁹ E.g., Neusner 1973, 1993; E. P. Sanders 1990, 1992; Harrington 1993, 2004; Klawans 2000, 2006; Hayes 2002.

cannot be carried out in the realm of the cult to the exclusion of a consideration of morality. The concern with purity that was manifested at Qumran covered both the cultic and the moral life to the extent that the two areas were intermingled and at times indistinguishable. If this is in fact the case then it is even wrong to speak of either 'cultic' or 'moral' purity as such.¹⁵⁰

Newton argues that the members of the sectarian communities believed that the infringement of the regulations of the community generated impurity that would defile the offender (cf. 1QS 5:13–14). Jonathan Klawans supports Newton's view: 'This tendency has become full-blown in the penal code of the Rule of the Community, with the result that all sorts of acts of deceit and arrogance have come to be understood as sources of defilement. And because the *Rule of the Community* recognizes no distinction between ritual and moral impurity, these moral sins were considered to bring about ritual impurity'.¹⁵¹

Newton further maintains that the sectarian communities also considered that, as a person who was in a state of impurity was regarded as a threat to the sanctity of the Temple (e.g., Lev 15:31; Num 19:13), so a person who contracted impurity due to a breach of the rule would be a threat to the sanctity of the "holy" community (e.g., 1QS 8. 20–24).¹⁵² In this regard, Newton points out both similarity and difference in Paul's letters. Paul repeatedly calls Gentile

¹⁵⁰ Newton 1985, 40. Cf. Klawans, *op cit.*, 83.

¹⁵¹ Klawans, *op cit.*, 83. As to the meanings of "ritual" and "moral" impurities, Klawans explains: "'Ritual impurity" refers here to the highly contagious but generally impermanent defilements also commonly known as "levitical." Ritual impurity results from primary or secondary contact with any one of a number of natural processes and substances, as described in Leviticus 11–15 and Numbers 19...The Bible, however, is concerned with another form of impurity, referred to here as "moral." Moral impurity results from committing certain acts so heinous as to be considered defiling. In the Holiness Code, sexual and cultic sins result in moral impurity. In Ezekiel, murder too defiles (33:25–26). Unlike contracting ritual impurity, the commission of these defiling acts is prohibited, and violations are punishable' (1995, 289–90).

¹⁵² Cf. Newton 1985, 40–3. Gärtner explains this point: 'Once the focus of holiness in Israel had ceased to be the temple [for the members of the sectarian community], it was necessary to provide a new focus. This focus was the community, which called itself "the Holy place" and "the Holy of holies" (1965, 15).

Christians “holy ones” (ἅγιοι; e.g., Rom 1:7; 1Cor 1:2; 2Cor 1:1; Phil 1:1), and warns them not to contract impurity from Gentiles who commit sexual immoralities (cf. 1Cor 6:12–20; 1Thess 4:3–7). However, it is important to stress that Paul’s concern is solely directed to the issue of “moral” impurity.¹⁵³ Paul is indifferent to the possibility of contracting the ritual impurity generated by unclean animals (cf. Rom 14:14, 20). On this point, there is a marked difference between Paul and the author(s) of the *Rule of the Community*, for whom ritual impurity is also to be avoided with the same seriousness. Notwithstanding this, Paul seems to share with the sectarian communities the conviction that they (either Christians or the members of the sectarian groups) are the holy ones, and that moral misconduct poses a threat to the holiness of the community. Newton explains: ‘1 Corinthians 5:9–13 continues with the theme of the purity of the Church...An act of immorality within the Church causes it to be polluted. So as to avoid the polluting effect of evil-doers within their ranks Paul calls on the Church “not to associate [συναναμείγνυμι (sic)] with anyone who bears the name of brother if he is guilty of...” (1Cor. 5:11). This is clearly a call for purity’.¹⁵⁴ From these observations, Newton provides an insightful argument as to Paul’s distinctive ecclesiology, namely, the Church as the Temple of God. Newton challenges the scholarly tendency to ‘see Paul’s use of the concept of the Temple as merely metaphorical’.¹⁵⁵ He contends that Paul fully recognises the enormous significance for his Jewish contemporaries of the extant Temple in Jerusalem as the dwelling place of God.¹⁵⁶ However, as the sectarian communities are convinced of their sanctity as “the House of

¹⁵³ The distinction between “ritual” and “moral” impurities advocated by Klawans is gaining support from New Testament scholars. See, e.g., Bauckham 2005.

¹⁵⁴ Ibid., 93.

¹⁵⁵ Ibid., 58.

¹⁵⁶ This point is further elaborated by Hogeterp, who argues that while it is questionable that the rabbinic term *Shekhinah* was used in the pre-70 milieu, the association of God’s Spirit with the Temple was

Holiness consisting of Israel, a most holy assembly for Aaron”¹⁵⁷, so Paul boldly claims that God’s presence now resides in the Christian community as the true Temple of God.¹⁵⁸ Hence Paul regards himself as a priest who serves this new Temple, and also views Christian believers as both sacrificial offerings and priests.¹⁵⁹

3. 5. 2 Temple ecclesiology in Romans 3:24–25

Newton construes Romans 3:24–25 in the light of Paul’s Temple ecclesiology. He draws attention to an important yet neglected purpose of the sin offering, that is, the “purification of the Temple”.¹⁶⁰ According to Newton, Paul imagines that the blood of Christ cleanses the Temple (i.e., the church), as the act of sprinkling the sacrificial blood on the mercy seat cleanses the Temple on Yom Kippur.¹⁶¹ Newton argues that, through his death, Jesus became ‘both a sacrificial offering and the place of offering’,¹⁶² and conducted the ultimate Yom Kippur offering so as to enable God’s permanent presence (i.e., the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit) among the forgiven, purified community, the church.¹⁶³ Newton considers that Paul’s concern for maintaining holiness and purity in the Christian community reflects the Jewish

widely observable in the Second Temple literature. Hogeterp 298-300, 326-31.

¹⁵⁷ 1QS 8:5–6. Translated by James H. Charlesworth.

¹⁵⁸ Mckelvey’s account supports Newton’s contention: ‘More specifically, it should be noted that it is the body (σῶμα) which Paul says is God’s temple. Such a thought was foreign to the Greeks; and only in the case of Adam, the perfect man, was Philo willing to entertain the possibility. In this tradition it is the soul (ψυχή) or mind (νοῦς) which is the temple; the body is the prison of the soul’ (1969, 104). See also Gärtner 1965, 57-8; Hogeterp 2006, 295-8; Macaskill 2013, 154-9.

¹⁵⁹ Newton, *op cit.*, 60-75.

¹⁶⁰ Ibid., 43-6. Newton follows the view of Milgrom, whose view we shall consider in the next chapter.

¹⁶¹ Ibid., 76-7.

¹⁶² Ibid., 75.

¹⁶³ Finlan criticizes Newton’s view, arguing that there is no Temple ecclesiology in the epistle to the Romans (2004, 145). However, Paul’s statement in Romans 12:5 (“so we, who are many, are one body in Christ, and individually we are members one of another”) is strongly reminiscent of 1 Corinthians 12:12, and Romans 6:4 is of 1 Corinthians 12:13. Such striking parallels suggest that Paul presupposes the Temple ecclesiology in Romans as well.

eagerness to maintain the holiness and purity of the Jerusalem Temple.¹⁶⁴

Newton's study sheds important light on the relationship between Paul's use of sacrificial imagery and his Temple ecclesiology. Another significant contribution of Newton's work is the integration of the issue of purity into the study of Paul's soteriology. Moreover, his construal of Romans 3:24–25 provides a helpful insight into Paul's understanding of the atoning work of Christ. However, while his study casts fresh light on the neglected point of the sanctification of the Christian community in Romans 3:24–25, he draws little attention to the more prominent theme in Romans, the theme of the "wrath of God". As our following study will show, the notion of "atonement" is not just about "purification". We must pursue a more holistic understanding of "atonement" in this research.

3. 6 Hudson McLean

One of the most crucial developments in the study of Paul's sacrificial motifs is the clarification of the fundamental difference between the blood-sacrificial ritual and the expulsion (or removal) ritual. McLean's research published in 1996 as *The Cursed Christ* is a milestone in this area of study. As we shall see in the next chapter, the Yom Kippur rite mainly consists of two different rituals. In one ritual, the blood of the sacrifices plays a key role, but in the other, the blood plays no role. The former is the sin/purification offering, and the other is the scapegoat ritual.

McLean categorises the scapegoat as an apotropaic ritual, which was widely practiced in

¹⁶⁴ Newton, *ibid.*, 79-114.

the Greco-Roman world.¹⁶⁵ According to McLean, ‘an apotropaic ritual can be divided into five steps: selection, consecration, investiture, transference and finally expulsion (sometimes followed by execution)’.¹⁶⁶ McLean asserts that the scapegoat cannot be referred to as a sacrifice, since it is sent not to God but to Azazel, which most probably signifies a demonic being.¹⁶⁷ He maintains that Paul applies this “apotropaic paradigm”, which would have been intelligible to both Jewish and Greco-Roman audiences, to Jesus’ death. McLean explains:

The apotropaic victim functions in a substitutionary role by taking the place of the threatened community and assuming this burden. For example, the Athenian *pharmakoi* would take upon themselves the curse causing the plague or drought which threatened the citizens. Likewise, Christ is said to have died in substitution for all who are oppressed by the powers of the old order – sin and its curse – in order that those who relinquish all ties with this old order may be rescued from them.¹⁶⁸

One of the most significant contributions of McLean’s study is his critique of the longstanding scholarly tendency to confuse the blood-sacrificial ritual with the scapegoat ritual. However, whereas McLean puts much emphasis on Paul’s dependence on the idea of the expulsion ritual, he asserts that Paul never uses sacrificial concepts in his elucidation of Jesus’ death.¹⁶⁹ On this point, he seems to go to the other extreme. We can enumerate five reasons that contradict McLean’s assertion.

First, it must be stated that the scapegoat, which McLean categorises as the best example of the apotropaic ritual in the Jewish scriptures, can be called *a sacrifice for sins*. The

¹⁶⁵ Mclean 1996, 65-104.

¹⁶⁶ Ibid., 73. However, the Passover sacrifices in the Exodus event, whose blood were used for an apotropaic end, do not fit in with this paradigm.

¹⁶⁷ Ibid., 79-81.

¹⁶⁸ Ibid., 144.

¹⁶⁹ Ibid., 52.

scapegoat ritual is indeed unique within the sacrificial system as a whole. In the blood sacrifice, slaughtering an animal initiates the ritual, whereas the scapegoat should not be killed in the Temple court. The blood assumes no role in this ritual. On the scapegoat's back, all the sins and iniquities of Israel are laid, and the scapegoat *is sent alive to Azazel* (cf. Lev 16:10, 21–22). Given this unique role of the scapegoat, not a few scholars argue that the scapegoat is not categorised as a sacrifice.¹⁷⁰ Nevertheless, it could be called a sacrifice, as Leviticus 16:5 LXX reads: λήμψεται δύο χιμάρους ἐξ αἰγῶν περὶ ἁμαρτίας. Since περὶ ἁμαρτίας is the technical term that signifies a sacrifice for sins, it is possible that first century Jewish readers regarded both goats (one for the Lord, the other for Azazel) as the sacrifices for sins.¹⁷¹ Since this point is worthy of further consideration, we shall return to it in our study of the Yom Kippur rite in the next chapter.

Second, and related to the last point, although McLean groups the scapegoat ritual and the other Mediterranean apotropaic rituals together, there are notable differences between the two. Although it is true that victims of the latter type of ritual, either animal or human, were often “cursed”,¹⁷² they were not called the bearers of sins or transgressions of the people (cp. Lev 16:21).¹⁷³ Hence, it remains questionable whether the Greco-Roman audience could have detected a clear analogy between the *pharmakos* and Jesus who died for sins (cf. 1Cor 15:3). More important, the scapegoat ritual is not an independent ritual, as the Mediterranean apotropaic rituals are. Rather, it is a part of the complex Yom Kippur rite, and this rite as a

¹⁷⁰ E.g., Milgrom 1991, 1041; Gane 2004, 274.

¹⁷¹ Cf. Levine 1989, 101.

¹⁷² Cf. Ibid., 84–100.

¹⁷³ Although McLean uncritically relies on the view of Lewis Farnell who describes the Athenian *pharmakos* as an “abject sin-carrier” or “sin-bearer”, Farnell fails to provide solid evidence for this designation. Cf. Farnell 1907, 280.

whole should not simply be categorized as an apotropaic rite.¹⁷⁴

More problematic, however, is, third, the fact that McLean's argument does not do justice to the force of Paul's explicit statement in 1 Corinthians 5:7 (Christ our paschal lamb was *sacrificed*). Admittedly, the verb θύω can simply mean "to slaughter". Moreover, his analysis of the perception of the Passover sacrifice in the first century milieu would be correct: 'at no stage in the evolution of the Passover was the paschal sacrifice ever understood to be atoning in nature, nor for that matter was the blood considered to have had a purgative significance'.¹⁷⁵ Nevertheless, it remains true that the paschal lamb is a *sacrifice* (cf. Exod 12:27), if not a sacrifice for sins.

Fourth, McLean asserts that Paul employs the term "Christ's blood" as a synonym for Jesus' death.¹⁷⁶ However, in the sin offering, the most important element in the sacrifice is blood itself, which is not death but *life*. Hence, when Paul uses the term αἷμα in a sacrificial context, he may well be aware of this point.¹⁷⁷ If this is the case, it provides another piece of evidence that Paul utilises sacrificial ideas in his soteriological thought.

Finally, his claim that the anarthrous phrase περὶ ἁμαρτίας never means "for a sin-offering" in LXX is gratuitous, as we can find an example of anarthrous usage in Leviticus 5:6 in LXX: θῆλυ ἀπὸ τῶν προβάτων, ἀμνάδα ἢ χίμαιραν ἐξ αἰγῶν, περὶ ἁμαρτίας ("a female from sheep, ewe lambs, or a young she-goat from goats, for the sin offering").¹⁷⁸ It should also be remembered that there are ample examples of such a usage in the epistle to the Hebrews (Heb 5:3; 10:6, 8, 18,

¹⁷⁴ We shall discuss this point in depth in the next chapter.

¹⁷⁵ McLean 1996, 43.

¹⁷⁶ Ibid., 47.

¹⁷⁷ We shall consider this issue in chapter 3.

¹⁷⁸ My translation.

26; 13:11).¹⁷⁹ Thus, it is difficult to say that Paul never refers or alludes to the sin offering in his descriptions of Jesus' death

In sum, while Mclean's clarification of the difference between the blood-sacrificial ritual and the scapegoat ritual greatly contributes to the advancement of Pauline studies, he fails to recognise the sacrificial ideas in Paul's soteriology.

3. 7 Stephen Finlan

Stephen Finlan's *The Background and Content of Paul's Cultic Atonement Metaphors*, published in 2004, reflects the latest research developments in both Pauline studies and Jewish sacrificial practices. As to the scope of his study, Finlan states: 'I will be concentrating on Paul's use of sacrifice and scapegoat metaphors, but that does not mean that I think it possible to reduce his theology to these two themes. Paul's is a great synthetic theology in which many themes are brought together'.¹⁸⁰ Finlan aims to compensate for the weakness of McLean's study, which completely ignores the blood-sacrificial elements in Paul's soteriology.

As a preliminary to a study of Paul's atonement thinking, Finlan explores the meaning of "atonement" in the Jewish sacrificial context.¹⁸¹ After stressing the peril of reducing this term to a single meaning, he turns to a perennial question among New Testament scholars: 'NT scholars are particularly interested in the meaning of *kipper*, because this impinges on the meaning of NT sayings about the death of Jesus that utilize the *ἱλάσσομαι* word group. Scholars have debated whether *ἱλάσσομαι* has primarily the sense of *propitiation* (appeasing or

¹⁷⁹ McLean 1996, 46.

¹⁸⁰ Finlan 2004, 9.

¹⁸¹ Cf. Lang, "*kipper*," *TDOT* 7:288-303.

conciliating God) or of *expiation* (removing or wiping away sin).¹⁸² Finlan rightly indicates that the word כפר in the Hebrew scriptures can mean a “payment” or “ransom” that conciliates the wrath of God:

Hartley minimizes propitiation. “Not God’s kindled wrath but his potential wrath is the direct focus of the expiating sacrifice,” and there is no need to propitiate a God who is not yet angry. But propitiation certainly is present if God’s anger will swiftly follow any letup in the regimen of ritual feeding. This is the agreement: God agrees to withhold his wrath if humans remember to keep up their offerings. Here sacrifice resembles a tribute payment to a demanding sovereign.¹⁸³

Finlan goes on to explain:

All monetary transactions are substitutionary in a pragmatic, not moral, sense. Hebrew sacrifice does not involve the animal substituting for one who has been justly convicted of sin. Rather, it is a payment; after all, foodstuffs have *value*. Various texts speak both of kipping and of making restitution plus one-fifth (Lev 5:24 [6:5 NRSV]; Num 5:7), or of paying double (Exod 22:7–9). כפר, then, has this connotation of payment, which does not negate its denotation, its primary meaning, of purging or cleansing.¹⁸⁴

His view that the sacrificial offering functions as a “payment” that appeases the wrath of God is of great significance for a proper understanding of sacrificial practices.

Having clarified the multiple denotations and connotations of “atonement” in the sacrificial context, Finlan proceeds to the exegeses of Paul’s salvific statements. He maintains that Paul exploits some images, such as the blood sacrifices and the scapegoat ritual, from the Yom

¹⁸² Finlan 2004, 38.

¹⁸³ Ibid., 38. See also Hartley 1992, 65. Hartley further maintains: ‘This interpretation, therefore, supports rendering כפר in the cultic texts as “expiate,” not “propitiate.”’ Ibid., 65.

¹⁸⁴ Ibid., 43–4. See also Eberhart 2011b, 70.

Kippur rite in the epistle to the Romans, which can be found in the two phrases: ἱλαστήριον διὰ [τῆς] πίστεως ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι (Rom 3:25) and περὶ ἁμαρτίας (Rom 8:3). Concerning the former phrase, Finlan construes the word ἱλαστήριον as either a “place of atonement” or the “mercy seat”,¹⁸⁵ and contends that the thrust of Paul’s argument in Romans 3:25 is to describe Jesus’ death as ‘a new Yom Kippur ritual’.¹⁸⁶ On Romans 8:3, Finlan renders περὶ ἁμαρτίας as “for a sin-offering”,¹⁸⁷ and he further explains: ‘In Romans 8:3 Paul joins sacrificial, judicial, and scapegoat metaphors: Christ was sent *in the flesh* as a sin offering (sacrificial) so that God could condemn sin (judicial) *in the flesh* (scapegoat). The specific focus on “the flesh” at the beginning and end of the verse suggests a scapegoat image, as does the idea of one creature taking something on for the whole community’.¹⁸⁸ Concerning 2 Corinthians 5:21, Finlan writes:

At the heart of the scapegoat ritual is an exchange of conditions: the pure goat takes on the community’s sin, and the community takes on the goat’s purity. This interchange is at the heart of Paul’s soteriology...What happens in 2 Corinthians 5:21 is like what happens in a reversal ritual, not like what happens in a law court. This passage does not describe “justification” but change of status, a new “becoming.” Christ *becomes* sin, and people *become the righteousness of God* – a stunning reversal that has nothing to do with acquittal but everything to do with what happens when an animal or a person “becomes” sin and is banished by the community.¹⁸⁹

¹⁸⁵ Finlan 2004, 123-62; 2005, 39-41; 2007, 20-1. See especially an important philological study of Bailey, 1990. He argues that, from a linguistic point of view, ἱλαστήριον designated either a place of atonement (more specifically the “mercy seat”) in LXX or the votive offering in the pagan world, but was never used to signify a sacrificial animal in the first century CE. See also T. W. Manson 1945; Kraus 1991; Campbell 1992, 130-3; Schreiner 1998, 192-5.

¹⁸⁶ Finlan 2005, 41.

¹⁸⁷ Finlan 2004, 49. Also see. Bailey *op. cit.*, 156.

¹⁸⁸ Finlan 2007, 25 [Finlan’s italics].

¹⁸⁹ Finlan 2005, 42-3 [Finlan’s italics].

With respect to Galatians 3:10–13, Finlan argues that Paul here uses cultic, economic, and judicial metaphors: ‘So the threefold metaphor in Galatians 3:10–13 is this: Christ takes away our curse by becoming a scapegoat, purchases the freedom of the captives of sin, and secures a favorable judicial result for human plaintiffs in the divine court’.¹⁹⁰

Finlan’s exhaustive and meticulous study is highly commendable. Finlan’s deep and broad knowledge of Jewish sacrificial practices and concepts is impressive. Nevertheless, his exposition is unsatisfactory on several points. First, Finlan does not fully explore the significance of the Exodus theme in Paul’s soteriology.¹⁹¹ Although he describes Jesus’ death as “the *new* Passover lamb”,¹⁹² he does not consider the possibility that this motif can be better comprehended within the Exodus story on which Paul might have constructed his exhortation. Concerning *πάσχα* in 1 Corinthians 5:7, he argues that it represents the apotropaic function (i.e., averting the wrath of God) of the Passover sacrifice.¹⁹³ This rendering is not entirely satisfactory, however. We shall discuss this point further in chapter 3.

Second, though Finlan claims that Paul sees that the “purity” of the scapegoat (i.e., an analogy of Christ’s righteousness) is transferred to believers,¹⁹⁴ this is far from convincing. Though it is true, as we shall see in the next chapter, that the scapegoat ritual contains the concept of “transfer”, it must be stated that the transfer occurring in this ritual was not reciprocal. Whereas the sins of Israel were to be transferred to and laid on the scapegoat,¹⁹⁵ there is no evidence that ancient Jews believed that either the “righteousness” or “purity” of the

¹⁹⁰ Ibid., 45.

¹⁹¹ He only makes passing reference to this topic. E.g., Finlan 2004, 153, 170.

¹⁹² Ibid., 72.

¹⁹³ Finlan 2005, 31; 2007, 21.

¹⁹⁴ Finlan 2005, 42-3.

¹⁹⁵ Milgrom 1991, 1:1041.

scapegoat was reciprocally transferred to the people of Israel. Moreover, he does not address the question of how God's righteousness, rather than Christ's righteousness or purity, can be transferred to Christian believers.¹⁹⁶

Third and most importantly, Finlan does not fully appreciate the importance of Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology. He maintains, 'Paul may get some of his ideas of heroic death from Isaiah, but his participationist notion cannot be found there'.¹⁹⁷ On this point, he seems to attribute the "vicarious" idea found in Paul's soteriology all to the scapegoat ritual. However, it must be remembered that Paul never explicitly likens Jesus to the scapegoat.¹⁹⁸ Hence, it is necessary to seek the possibility that the idea of vicariousness in Paul's thought is rooted in Isaiah 53.

Finally, Finlan states, 'By variously describing Christ as the typological fulfillment of the OT cult, he [Paul] shows that Christ provides *all* the things the cult was thought to provide'.¹⁹⁹ Finlan further maintains: 'Paul's treatment of the Jewish cult is thoroughly typologically: what matters is the *fulfillment* in Christ'.²⁰⁰ This "cultic fulfilment" theory is, however, not entirely convincing for two reasons. First, Finlan's account does not properly explain why the fulfilment of these sacrificial activities results in the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise of the outpouring of the Spirit (cf. Gal 3:14). Paul clearly sees a causal link between Jesus' death and this blessing, but the sacrificial system does not provide an account of how this works. Second,

¹⁹⁶ The meaning of "God's righteousness" becomes a matter of scholarly debate. As a representative of those who maintain the objective genitive rendering of this phrase (i.e., the righteousness from God as a gift), see Bultmann 1952, 285. Against this rendering, see Käsemann 1969, 168-82; 1980, 29; Stendahl 1976, 31; Dahl 1977, 96-105; Williams, Sam 1980; Hays 1989, 36; Campbell 1992, 138-76; D. Wenham 1995, 54-8; Dunn 1998, 340-6; Bailey 1999, 178-81; N. T. Wright 2002, 398-403, 465, 2013 795-804; Bird 2006, 6-39; Hooker 2008, 370-1; Macchia 2010. See also Kertelge, "δικαιοσύνη," *EDNT* 1:327-8. Cf. Hill 1967, 88.

¹⁹⁷ Finlan 2004, 177.

¹⁹⁸ Cf. chapter 5, 1.2.

¹⁹⁹ *Ibid.*, 178 [Finlan's italics].

²⁰⁰ *Ibid.*, 185 [Finlan's emphasis].

it is important to remember that the whole sacrificial system is designed to *maintain* the covenant relationship between God and his people. Once this relationship has been broken, the covenantal curses are unleashed. The existing sacrificial remedies have no power to *terminate* these curses. Thus, even if Jesus does typologically fulfil every sacrificial role through his death, one struggles to understand how, on a sacrificial level, that event would be sufficient to redeem the covenant people from the covenantal curse.²⁰¹

4. Conclusion

4. 1 Summary of the history of research

We have first reviewed the general tendencies of scholars as to their views on Paul's use of sacrificial imagery in his soteriological statements. It is often the case that their accounts betray misunderstandings of various sacrificial practices and the ideas behind them. Therefore, it is not accidental that the breakthroughs in this area of research have been accomplished by those scholars who have astute insights into sacrificial practices and their meanings. These scholars shed light on several crucial aspects of Paul's thought. Davies understands Paul's soteriology in the New Exodus paradigm. He also stresses the importance of "blood" in Jewish sacrificial practices. Sanders makes a great contribution by expounding the relationship between sacrifice and the covenant. Newton demonstrates that a Temple ecclesiology and a corresponding concern for "purity" are crucial elements in Paul's soteriology. McLean draws a clear distinction between blood-sacrificial rituals and the scapegoat ritual. Finlan expounds the

²⁰¹ We shall discuss this point fully in chapter 5.

diversity of Paul's cultic terms and their theological backgrounds.

4. 2 The task to be addressed

Despite the considerable progress in understanding Paul's use of sacrificial imagery, a vital issue remains to be explored. A number of scholars now argue that some kind of new Exodus framework provides Paul with a larger narrative conception of God's redemptive work through Jesus. On the other hand, scholars like Finlan recognise the complexity and variety of cultic motifs and ideas in Paul's soteriological statements. Nonetheless, there has been little attempt to understand these various motifs within such a larger *narrative* framework. It is important to note that some of Paul's sacrificial motifs would have evoked more than simply Jewish sacrificial rituals, for example, the larger contexts of Jewish holy convocations, not least Passover and Yom Kippur. As we shall see in the next chapter, the Passover feast is inseparably connected to the story of Israel. At its core this feast is a commemoration and re-enactment of one of the decisive events in the story of Israel. Even in the case of Yom Kippur, strong ties are evident between this holy day and the future hope of Israel. Hence, if Paul's sacrificial motifs evoke the images of these holy convocations, it is possible that these motifs are rooted in Paul's understanding of the larger story of Israel. This point is critically important for our study, since the notion of the "covenant" is one of the crucial elements in the story of Israel.²⁰² Therefore, it is vital to explore the significance of Passover and Yom Kippur in the first century milieu.

²⁰² Cf. N. T. Wright 1992, 260-2.

Chapter 2: Passover and Yom Kippur for first century Jews

1. Passover and Yom Kippur

1. 1 Introduction

In the previous chapter, we reviewed a number of scholarly analyses of Paul's usage of sacrificial imagery in his soteriological statements. Although they disagree on various points, most of them agree on one particular point: some terms in Paul's statements are related to annual Jewish feasts or convocations, such as Passover and Yom Kippur. The most obvious example is the term *πάσχα*, which is clearly associated with the Passover feast and the feast of Unleavened Bread (cf. 1Cor 5:6–8). As regards Yom Kippur, Paul does not explicitly mention it in his letters. However, since *ἱλαστήριον* is a technical term that largely signifies the “mercy seat” in Greek versions of Jewish scriptures,²⁰³ for those who were familiar with the Pentateuch, the use of this word would have evoked the Yom Kippur imagery. Four out of five scholars whom we reviewed closely (Davies, Newton, McLean, and Finlan) acknowledge that the Yom Kippur motifs (either or both the blood-sacrificial ritual and/or scapegoat ritual) play an important role in Paul's thought. Indeed, many other Pauline scholars point out that the Yom Kippur rite constitutes an important background to Paul's soteriology.²⁰⁴ Hence, we have

²⁰³ There are, of course, some exceptions, as Kraus explains, ‘Andererseits wird jedoch gern übersehen, daß *ἱλαστήριον* nicht nur die Übersetzung für *כפרת* im Jerusalemer Tempel darstellt, sondern in der Ausgabe des Symmachus in Gen 6,16 die Arche gemeint ist, in Am 9,1 LXX ein Sühneort im Betheler Heiligtum und in Ey 43,14 (ter). 17.20 LXX die *עזרה*, d.h. ein Teil des Altarkorpus des im Zentrum der neuen Tempelanlage stehenden Brandopferaltars’ (1991, 157).

²⁰⁴ E.g., T. W. Manson 1945; C. K. Barrett 1971, 128; Gese 1981, 115; Dunn 1988, 172, 180; Kraus 1991; Fitzmyer 1992, 349-50; Campbell 1992, 130-3; Stuhlmacher 1994, 59; Schreiner 1998, 192-5; Bailey 1999; Moo 2000, 129; N. T. Wright 2002, 476-7.

reasonable grounds for assuming that Paul employs both Passover and Yom Kippur motifs in his accounts of Jesus' death. In what follows, we shall explore how first century Jews perceived the meaning of Passover and Yom Kippur respectively, in order to gain insight into Paul's use of these motifs.

1. 2 Methodological Remarks

It is important to clarify how our research is to be conducted. As regards the feast of Passover, we must first examine the main sources of knowledge of this feast for first century Jews. Stowers comments, 'Paul and his readers may have understood the cult either through their own reading of the scriptural sources or through a knowledge of the temple cult as it operated in the first century or through a combination of scripture and current practice'.²⁰⁵ For first century Jews, these two mediums would have been inseparable, for a recitation of the holy scriptures was an essential part of the Passover feast (cf. Exod 12:26–27). Hence, we shall first examine how the scriptures themselves explain Passover, and then consult the writings from the first century CE, which give descriptions of the activities of the people during the Passover feast.

With regard to Yom Kippur, its dual character should be noted. While Yom Kippur was one of the annual Jewish holy convocations (cf. Lev 23:27; Num 29:7), it also constituted an essential part of the sacrificial system in the book of Leviticus (cf. Lev 16:2–34). The Jewish scriptures provide relatively little on this convocational aspect. Thus, in order to know how first century Jews observed the Yom Kippur convocation, we must rely mainly on the extra-biblical sources. It is beyond our purpose, though, to make a comprehensive survey of all the Second

²⁰⁵ Stowers 1994, 208.

Temple sources that explicitly or implicitly refer to the Yom Kippur convocation, such as has recently been conducted by Daniel Stökl Ben Ezra.²⁰⁶ Instead, we shall focus on some significant texts that provide insights into this convocation.

The Jewish scriptures give detailed accounts of Yom Kippur as a Temple rite, but there is almost no text from the first century CE that explains how this rite was conducted in the Temple. The observation of the entire procedure of the Yom Kippur rite was only available to a high priest, who alone entered the holy of holies (cf. Lev 16:17). Hence, it was through the book of Leviticus that first century Jews gained the whole picture. Therefore, the best way to explore how first century Jews understood the Yom Kippur rite is to consider how they read and understood Leviticus 16. Though the Mishnah contains much information about this rite, it may be problematic to use it as our primary source. It must be remembered that the Second Temple had been demolished long before the compilation of the Mishnah. E. P. Sanders thus warns, ‘The problem with using the Mishnah is that there is very seldom this sort of reference to pre-70 practice that allows us to make critical distinctions: not only are we often reading second-century discussions, we may be learning only second-century theory’.²⁰⁷ Nevertheless, the Mishnah is chronologically closer to the Second Temple period than the rest of the Tannaitic literature. Hence, while our primary source must be the scriptures, it would be beneficial to consult the Mishnah with reservations.

²⁰⁶ Stökl Ben Ezra 2003.

²⁰⁷ Sanders 1992, 104.

2. Passover

2. 1 The Passover event in the Exodus story

According to the Jewish scriptures, the origin of the Passover feast is found in the Exodus narrative. The Passover event is one of the climactic moments within the Exodus story, and the purpose of observing the Passover feast for subsequent generations is to commemorate this historic event (cf. Exod 12:26–27). Concerning the original Passover event, two points are important to our study of Paul's texts, and thus deserve particular attention.

First, the Exodus event is predicated on God's faithfulness to his covenantal promise to the patriarchs. According to the book of Exodus, God's redemptive action was initiated by his remembrance of the covenant with the patriarchs (cf. Exod 2:24). More than four hundred years before the Exodus, God made a covenant with Abraham, and foretold him that his descendants would be enslaved and oppressed in the land of Egypt, and that God would rescue them from their predicament (cf. Gen 15:13–16). The Passover event is the fulfilment of God's promise to Abraham (cf. Gen 15:14a; Exod 12:12).²⁰⁸

Second, it is vital to note that the slaughtering of lambs in this event had virtually no connection with the sin or guilt offering – sin was not forgiven, nor was purification effected. Not a single sin of Israel is mentioned in the Passover narrative. There was neither penitence nor confession of sins prior to the act of slaughter (cp. Ezra 9:3–5), and no declaration of forgiveness was pronounced to the congregation. Whereas God commanded all the Israelites to eat the meat of the slaughtered lambs (cf. Exod 12:8), this instruction is incongruous with the

²⁰⁸ This point is relevant to our study of Galatians in chapter 5.

practice of the sin offering. In fact, there is not a single stipulation that permits the offerer/offender to eat the meat of the animal sacrificed for sin in the Jewish scriptures (cf. Lev 4:1–6:13, 6:14–7:7). Hence, it is justifiably claimed that lambs were not sacrificed for the atonement for sins in the Passover event. Instead, the blood of the paschal lambs served an apotropaic end, functioning as a “sign” that marked the Israelite households out to protect them from the plague that would strike the Egyptians (Exod 12:13).²⁰⁹ The Passover event was the time of the judgement on “all the gods of Egypt” (Exod 12:12).²¹⁰

2. 2 The Passover feast in the first century CE

Next, in order to consider how first century Jews observed the Passover feast, we shall consult three sources: Philo, Josephus, and the Mishnah.

Philo provides a detailed account of the Passover feast in the first century CE. He states that in the time of the Passover feast all the Jews slaughtered lambs with their own hands (cf. *Spec Law* 2.145; *QE* 1.10). Philo’s report is corroborated by the Mishnah’s account, which states that the whole congregation of Israel slaughtered the paschal lambs in the Temple court, and the priests focused on the blood manipulation on this occasion (m. *Pesahim* 5.5–6). Philo stresses that this feast was celebrated in an exceedingly jubilant mood of thanksgiving (cf. *Spec Law* 2.146). According to Philo, each household took on the high dignity of the Temple, wherein the roasted meat of the paschal sacrifices was consumed: ‘On this day every dwelling-house is invested with the outward semblance and dignity of a temple’ (*Spec Law*

²⁰⁹ As Gilders discusses, ‘The blood is identified as an apotropaic agent. It achieves an instrumental effect, warding off destruction, because Yahweh sees it’ (2004, 44).

²¹⁰ This is important to our study of 1 Corinthians 5:7 in the next chapter.

2.148).²¹¹ This account implies that for at least some diaspora Jews the locus of the Passover feast did not lie in the act of slaughtering in the Temple, but in the Passover meal in each household.²¹²

Whilst the Passover feast was designed to re-enact the historic Passover event (cf. Exod 12:25–27), first century Jews did not imitate the act of putting the blood of the paschal lamb on the two doorposts and the lintel of the house (cf. Exod 12:7). According to the Mishnah, the priest dealt with the blood of the paschal sacrifices and tossed it on the base of the altar in the Temple (m. *Pesahim* 5.5–6).²¹³ If this Mishnah's account preserves the actual practice conducted in the Second Temple era, this implies that the apotropaeic element had been omitted from the Passover ritual. Moreover, it seems that the Passover sacrifice was clearly distinguished from the sin offering in the late Second Temple period. The Mishnah declares: 'If on the Sabbath a man slaughtered a Passover-offering under some other name, he is thereby liable to a Sin-offering' (m. *Pesahim* 6.4). In other words, whilst it was not permitted to make ordinal offerings, such as the sin offering, on the Sabbath, the Passover offering overrode the sabbatical regulations (cf. m. *Pesahim* 6.1–6). Since there would have been no necessity for rabbis to invent such an instruction,²¹⁴ this Mishnaic account may well reflect the actual practice in the late Second Temple period. Notably this is yet another piece of evidence against

²¹¹ Gray states, 'later still, certainly by the first century A. D., the victim was still slain in the Temple enclosure, its blood and fat were conveyed to the altar, but the meal was eaten by small companies in the houses of Jerusalem' (1925, 371). See also Routledge 2002, 208-22.

²¹² This point is also suggestive to our study of 1 Corinthians.

²¹³ The significance of this type of blood manipulation (tossing it on the base of the altar; cf. Lev 3:2) is variously interpreted, such as a preventive measure against human consumption of the blood, or the symbolic action of returning the blood to its owner (i.e., God). See Gilders 2004, 86-96. Whatever significance it may have, it is important to note that this act is distinguishable from 'the act of conveying the blood to the altar' (Gilders, *ibid.*, 107). Cf. Lev 4:4–7; 9:9.

²¹⁴ Since they could no longer practice the Passover sacrifice in the Temple.

categorising the paschal lamb as a sacrifice for sins.

By the recitation of the scriptures during the Passover meal, Jews would have naturally recalled the collective memory of the Exodus event in Egypt. The feast of Unleavened Bread had virtually coalesced with the Passover feast in the first century CE (Exod 13:5–8, cf. *Spec Law* 2.158), and the purpose of this feast was also to commemorate the Exodus event (cf. Exod 13:7–8). Hence, the ultimate goal of the vernal feasts as a whole was to evoke gratitude for the Exodus event, the great deliverance from the state of slavery. *Pesahim* conveys the essence of the Passover feast for ancient Jews:

In every generation a man must so regard himself as if he came forth himself out of Egypt, for it is written, *And thou shalt tell thy son in that day saying, It is because of that which the Lord did for me when I came forth out of Egypt.* Therefore are we bound to give thanks, to praise, to glorify, to honour, to exalt, to extol, and to bless him who wrought all those wonders for our fathers and for us. He brought us out from bondage to freedom, from sorrow to gladness, and from mourning to a Festival-day, and from darkness to great light, and from servitude to redemption; so let us say before him the *Hallelujah*.²¹⁵

Through participating in the Exodus event by observing this feast, Jews experienced God as the liberator. It would not be surprising, therefore, that commemorating the great deliverance in the past would have evoked a future hope, the hope that God would make a decisive move once again, and would accomplish a greater liberation from Israel's enemies. In the Jewish scriptures, a prophetic vision for the future is often envisaged as a re-enactment of the Exodus event, as the following example shows:

²¹⁵ *m. Pesahim* 10.5.

Micah 7:15–17: As the days when you came out of the land of Egypt, show us marvelous things. The nations shall see and be ashamed of all their might; they shall lay their hands on their mouths; their ears shall be deaf; they shall lick dust like a snake, like the crawling things of the earth; they shall come trembling out of their fortresses, they shall turn in dread to the Lord our God, and they shall stand in fear of you.

Indeed, all the major exilic and post-exilic prophets (Deutero-Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel) refer to the Exodus event as the basis of God's future salvation (e.g., Isa 52:3–5; Jer 16:14–15; 31:31–33; Ezek 20:34–37). Thus, for those who felt oppressed by their enemies in the present time, observing the Passover feast would have had important political implications. In support of this view, there seems to be a significant correlation between the Passover feast and Jewish revolts. According to Josephus, a riotous instability almost always erupted during the time of the Passover feast. Josephus does not report any such insurrection during the autumnal convocations, while there was one instance at the time of Pentecost (cf. *Ant.* 20:105–112; *J.W.* 2:10–13, 42–54; 224–227, 280–284).

This fact is not without significance, since the autumnal feast of Booths would have attracted more pilgrims in comparison with the vernal feast of Passover in the late Second Temple period.²¹⁶ The Gospels also attest that the Jewish ruling elites were afraid that during the time of Passover the people were liable to revolt (e.g., Matt 26:4; Mark 14:2). The cause of this phenomenon seems to lie in the distinctive nature of the Passover feast, which would have ignited the aspiration for “freedom”. As Horsley argues:

²¹⁶ As to the festival of Booths, Tigay explains, ‘It takes place when the bounty of the harvest is manifest and farmers have the leisure to remain at the sanctuary for all seven days of the festival, the longest stay of all the three pilgrimages...it is the festival that would attract the largest number of pilgrims to the chosen place’ (1996, 158).

Why are the Roman authorities and the Jewish high priests anxious about a “tumult” and “uprising” during the Passover festivals? The reason becomes clearer once we set the celebration of liberation in juxtaposition with the structural oppression of the imperial situation... The annual Passover celebration, however, was not simply “the sigh of the oppressed creature.” It was also “the *protest* against real distress.”²¹⁷

It is beyond our scope of research to consider to what extent such a rebellious sentiment had been shared among first century Jews.²¹⁸ Nevertheless, the evidence suggests that, at least for some Jews, the Passover feast was the time for not only the celebration of the past, but also the *anticipation* of the great deliverance in the near future.

3. Yom Kippur

3.1 Introduction

Yom Kippur, the Day of Atonement, is a composite of various elements. On this day, all Jews are to observe the most solemn convocation, in which they must deny themselves (Lev 16:29; 23:27; Num 29:7). On the same day, the high priest conducts a series of rituals in the Temple, which are unparalleled in complexity and seriousness within the Levitical sacrificial system. Hence, we must devote much more space to the study of Yom Kippur than to that of Passover conducted above. Our investigation of Yom Kippur consists of the three parts: 1) Yom Kippur as a holy convocation; 2) the complex rite carried out on Yom Kippur; and, 3) Yom Kippur in

²¹⁷ Horsley 1987, 34-5 [Horsley’s emphasis].

²¹⁸ In this regard, N. T. Wright argues: ‘This brief list of movements of revolt in the years preceding the war gives, I think, sufficient indication of the mood of the country as a whole. It supports the fairly obvious conclusion: Josephus has thoroughly falsified his own suggestion that one single party, begun by Judas the Galilean, was responsible for the entire drift towards the war with Rome which broke out in AD 66. Revolution of one sort or another was in the air, and often present on the ground, both in Galilee and (particularly) in Jerusalem, throughout the period of Roman rule’ (1992, 176).

relation to Jewish eschatological hope.

3. 2 Yom Kippur as a holy convocation

3. 2. 1 Yom Kippur as the day of mercy: Philo

Philo provides valuable information about Yom Kippur in the late Second Temple milieu. According to Philo, Yom Kippur was of critical importance to *all* Jews, including those who had little interest in religious activities: ‘On the tenth day is the fast, which is carefully observed not only by the zealous for purity and holiness, but also by those who never act religiously in the rest of their life’ (*Spec Laws* 1.186). Philo states that Moses declared Yom Kippur ‘a feast, the greatest of the feasts, in his native tongue a Sabbath of Sabbaths, or as the Greeks would say, *a seven of sevens*, a holier than the holy’ (*Spec Laws* 2.194; cf. Lev 23:32).²¹⁹ One of the most notable characteristics of Yom Kippur in comparison with other holy convocations is that this was the only convocation for which all members of the covenant observed fasting for one day to afflict their souls (cf. Lev 16:29, 31; 23:29, 32; Num 29:7).²²⁰ As regards the reason for abstaining from food, Philo stresses that what was behind fasting was sincere contrition for past sins:

[B]ecause the holy-day is entirely devoted to prayers and supplications, and men from morn to eve employ their leisure in nothing else but offering petitions of humble entreaty in which they seek earnestly to propitiate God and ask for remission of their

²¹⁹ The sabbatical aspect of Yom Kippur seems to be related to the Jewish notion of “exile”, to which we shall return in due course.

²²⁰ In the Qumran community, Yom Kippur was called “the day of fasting” as well as “the appointed time, the rest of the day of Atonement”. See. 1Qp Hab 11.6–7.

sins, voluntary and involuntary, and entertain bright hopes *looking not to their own merits but to the gracious nature of Him Who sets pardon before chastisement*.²²¹

For pious Jews, who always sought God's mercy through penitence and offerings of sacrifices, it was necessary to entreat God to forgive sins that they might have committed in ignorance. Even for those who did not lead a commendable life, Yom Kippur was an exceptionally important opportunity to make up for their laxity regarding the ancestral traditions: 'The high dignity of this day has two aspects, one as a festival, the other as a time of purification and escape from sins, for which *indemnity is granted by the bounties of the gracious God who has given to repentance the same honour as to innocence from sin*' (*Spec Law* 1.187). Yom Kippur was thus the most important day for both pious and uncommitted Jews, who were eager for the acquittal of all sins as well as for the covenantal blessings from God (cf. *Moses* 2.24).

3. 2. 2 Yom Kippur as the day of judgement: *Festival Prayers*

The *Festival Prayers* are the series of texts that refer to several Jewish festivals, though only Yom Kippur and the feast of the First Fruits are explicitly mentioned in the extant texts. They were most probably used for liturgical purposes. Whilst all the texts were found in Qumran caves, Falk argues that they probably originated outside the Qumran community, pointing out that 'the liturgical calendar assumed in *Festival Prayers* begins in the autumn rather than the spring as otherwise attested at Qumran'.²²² If this is correct, the *Festival Prayers* can be 'placed in the context of a broad stream of festival prayer tradition'.²²³ Although most of the

²²¹ Philo, *Spec Law* 2.196.

²²² Falk 1998, 157. Falk also indicates that the *Festival Prayers* do not exhibit any feature distinctive to the Qumran community.

²²³ *Ibid.*, 207.

manuscripts are extremely fragmentary, we are fortunate to have relatively well-preserved texts that refer to Yom Kippur (1Q 34; 4Q 507–509). Among the texts found in the Qumran caves, we shall examine 4Q508 2, which seems to capture well the essence of Yom Kippur for Jews in the Second Temple era. As regards its content, Falk points out the fact that none of the texts of *Festival Prayers* is written in the second person in its concluding part. Falk then concludes, ‘The most likely conclusion is that 4Q508 2 comes from the middle of a prayer for the Day of Atonement’.²²⁴

1. [...] and you dwelt in our midst [...]
2. [...] Remember, O Lord, the appointed time of your mercies, and the time of repentance [...]
3. [...] and you have established it for us (as) an appointed time of fasting, a stature [sic.] fore[ver...]
4. [...] and you know the hidden things and the revealed thing[s...]
5. [...] you [k]now our form [...]
6. [...ou]r [rising] and our lying down you [...] ²²⁵

Although the text is terse, it contains some key theological phrases that exhibit ancient Jewish views on Yom Kippur. The text confirms that Yom Kippur was a time of fasting as well as repentance. The author takes it for granted that God who dwells among his community knows every hidden deed of his people (cf. 4Q509 5-6 4). The theme of “revealing the hidden things” in line 4 is reminiscent of the ancient Jewish idea of God as the judge of the hidden things, as well as the early Christian conviction of the future judgement of Christ (cf. Sir 1:30; *Pss. Sol.* 9:3; Matt 6:4; Rom 2:16; 1 Cor 4:5; 14:25; 2 Cor 4:2). The judgemental tone is particularly

²²⁴ Ibid., 168.

²²⁵ 4Q508 2 1-6. Translated by Daniel K. Falk. *Op. cit.*, 168.

prominent in the fragment of 4Q509 5–6 ii, as Falk comments, ‘Fragments 5–6 ii allude to the curses of the covenant from the end of Deuteronomy, specifically citing God’s speech to Moses in Deut 31:16’.²²⁶ The author of 4Q508 2 views Yom Kippur as the time of judgement of all the hidden things, but it is indeed a merciful judgement toward those who repent.²²⁷ The theological thrust of this text is remarkably similar to that of Philo.

3. 2. 3 Yom Kippur for all Jews

The study above confirms that both Diaspora and Palestinian Jews in the first century CE recognised Yom Kippur as the day of “fasting” with prayers, through which all Jews expressed penitence for every sin committed throughout the year. Moreover, Yom Kippur was perceived as the day of judgement, on which all the hidden things were to be revealed. Both Philo and the *Festival Prayers* clearly exhibit the Jewish attitude of humility and of sheer dependence on God’s mercy at the time of Yom Kippur (cf. *Spec. Law* 2.196). It is uncertain, though, whether they believed that even blasphemous, wanton sins, which result in the death penalty or “cutting off” (e.g., Lev 18:29; 20:27; Num 15:30–1), could be forgiven on Yom Kippur. On this point, the Mishnah declares that even the serious, deliberate sins that deserve the death penalty can be forgiven (*m. Shebuoth* 1:6). Philo also states that both voluntary and involuntary sins are forgiven (*Spec. Law* 2.196). On this issue, we have another witness from the first century, namely, the author of the epistle to the Hebrews. He seems to consider that the scope of forgiveness is limited to unintentional sins, as he writes, “not without taking the blood that he [a high priest] offers for himself and *for the sins committed unintentionally* by the people” (Heb

²²⁶ Ibid., 166.

²²⁷ Cf. Ibid., 167; 4Q509 8.

9:7b). These attestations would seem to indicate that there was no concrete consensus on this point among first century Jews. At any rate, for the devoted Jews who dared not commit blasphemous sins, Yom Kippur must have been the special day on which all sins were graciously forgiven.²²⁸

3. 3 The Temple rite on Yom Kippur

3. 3. 1 Introduction

Yom Kippur is not only a holy convocation for all Jews, but also a complex Temple rite observed by the high priest. The Yom Kippur rite consists of the two different types of ritual (the blood-sacrificial ritual and the scapegoat ritual), and has a twofold purpose (making atonement for both the sanctuary and the entire people). Although the Yom Kippur rite involves complex elements, it nevertheless seems to possess a logical coherence through which each ritual is organically connected to the other. Before proceeding to the examination of this complex rite, however, it is useful to consider the general meaning of blood-sacrificial rituals for first century Jews.

3. 3. 2 Purpose of the blood sacrifice (a): punishment for sin?

It is vital to explore in what ways first century Jews conceived the purpose(s) of the blood sacrifice for sins. This question is significantly relevant to the overall purpose of our study of Paul's soteriology. In Christian theological traditions, it has often been assumed that Jewish

²²⁸ This point is suggestive to understand Paul's statement in Galatians 3:10.

blood sacrifices prefigured Christ's death.²²⁹ More specifically, it has been considered that Christ offered himself as the sacrifice for sins by suffering capital punishment from God in lieu of humanity as a whole (or for Christians only). As we saw in the previous chapter, Morris strongly insists that the purpose of the blood sacrifice in the sacrificial system is to execute capital punishment on the sacrificial animal as a substitute for the offerer, and he reconstructs Paul's atonement theology on this basis. Schreiner provides the same line of interpretation as to the purpose of blood sacrifices:

[T]he fundamental reason for the sacrifices is atonement, so that sinners could be forgiven by the Holy One. *The laying of hands on animals most likely means that the animal functions as a substitute for a person.* The sins of human beings are transferred, so to speak, to the animal. For many of us the sacrifice of animals remains abstract. But reflect on the violence of the activity: the blood, the entrails and the goriness of it all. The death of the animals shows that the penalty for sin is death. When we are told that the sacrifices are a soothing aroma, this image indicates that they satisfy God's wrath, that they appease his anger.²³⁰

Despite the popularity of such an interpretation, however, not a few scholars have raised dissenting voices. For example, Christian Eberhart argues:

[N]ouns and verbs [such as, **קָרַבַּן**, **בֹּא**, and **נָנַשׁ**] conveying the approach of the sanctuary permeate the regulations on sacrifice in Lev 1–7... [I]t may be mentioned that such terminological choices of the priestly communities and the ancient tradents of the Hebrew Bible texts do not convey any negative connotations. Instead, further Hebrew Bible texts indicate that specifically the burnt offering, the cereal offering, and the

²²⁹ Grudem maintains: 'Scripture's emphasis on the blood of Christ also shows the clear connection between Christ's death and the many sacrifices in the Old Testament that involved the pouring out of the life blood of the sacrificial animal. These sacrifices all pointed forward to and prefigured the death of Christ' (1994, 579).

²³⁰ Schreiner 2006, 82-3 [my italics].

sacrifice of well-being are often associated with a cheerful, merry, and celebratory atmosphere (1Sam 1:13–14; 2Chr 29:20–36). Furthermore, these terminological choices do not point to the act of slaughter at all. In animal sacrifice, slaughter occurs toward the beginning of the ritual; the ritual, however, continues after this activity, leading toward the act of burning all or a portion of the sacrificial material on the so-called altar of burnt offering (Lev 1:9, 13; 2:2, 11; 3:5, 11; 4:10, 31).²³¹

Eberhart's point that the essence of various sacrificial offerings prescribed in Leviticus 1–7 lies not in the act of slaughter but in the movement toward God's presence considerably weakens the credibility of the view that the purpose of the blood sacrifice is to execute capital punishment.

Along similar lines, Roy Gane explains, 'In an Israelite animal sacrifice the victim was slain so that its blood and body could be used, but slaughter itself was a relatively low point in terms of sanctity'.²³² In the sin offering, what must be brought to the presence of God is the "blood" that is the life of the sacrificial animal, which accomplishes atonement (cf. Lev 17:11). From the biblical point of view, it is not death but life that attains atonement.²³³ Hence, insofar as we consider the meaning of the death of Christ from the Jewish sacrificial perspective, the particular view that Jesus' death itself as capital punishment functions as a sacrifice to God is difficult to maintain.

It is also important to consider this issue from the viewpoint of first century Jews who had experienced the blood-sacrificial rituals firsthand. Kiuchi states: 'as modern anthropologists and some biblical scholars have emphasized, it is unlikely that the ancient Israelites performed their ritual acts without being aware of their symbolic meaning; rather the meaning of the ritual acts

²³¹ Eberhart 2011a, 23-4.

²³² Gane 2004, 67.

²³³ Cf. Hicks 1959, 12-3; Vaux 1964, 92-3; Gerstenberger 1996, 60; Moffitt 2011, 219.

are rarely spelled out because they were self-evident to them'.²³⁴ Therefore, when we explore this issue from the first century perspective, it would hardly be true that the majority of Jews understood the purpose of the blood sacrifice as the implementation of capital punishment. Indeed, there are good reasons to conclude that they would have thought otherwise. We shall enumerate four reasons for this.

First, if the sacrificial animal is killed as the substitute for the offerer/offender for the punishment for sins, this implies that the Mosaic law *originally* intends that any offender, who commits sin either inadvertently or intentionally, be put to death in order to attain an atoning effect from his death. Under this presupposition, the purpose of the blood sacrifice is viewed as a divine concession that allows the offerer to execute a sacrificial animal as an alternative for his own lethal punishment. Such an idea is, however, alien to the ideology of the Levitical sacrificial system. It must be indicated that the stipulations for the sin offering in Leviticus 4:1–35 are designed for an unintentional sin, as Milgrom explains, ‘Inadvertence is a key criterion in all expiatory sacrifice. A deliberate, brazen sinner is barred from the sanctuary (Num 15:30–31)’.²³⁵ If a devout first century Jew living in Jerusalem unintentionally commits a sin and becomes aware of it, he must slay a female goat as a sin offering (Lev 4:27–31). In this case, it is irrational to say that the goat is slain as the punishment on behalf of the offender, for there is no commandment that demands the death penalty for an unintentional sin (e.g., Exod 21:13; Num 35:10–15; Deut 19:1–10). Thus, a first century Jew who made a sacrifice to atone

²³⁴ Kiuchi 1987, 18. See also Douglas 1984 [1966]; 1999.

²³⁵ Milgrom 1991, 228. Hartley also indicates, ‘In many cultic passages, especially in Lev 4, the term **בְּשִׁגְגָה**, “inadvertently,” is joined to **חַטָּא**, “sin,” in order to restrict it to offenses committed out of ignorance or human frailty (4:25; 5:25 [6:6]). In Num 15:22–31 a sin committed inadvertently is contrasted to one done with **בְּיָד רְמוּה**, “a high hand,” i.e., a deliberate, defiant action’ (1992, 55).

for an unintentional sin probably did not imagine that the animal was killed as capital punishment for his unwitting sin.

Moreover, a Jewish woman who bore a child was instructed to make a sin offering (Lev 12:6). In this case, did this woman think that an animal was vicariously killed for the sin of bearing the child? Certainly not!²³⁶ Conversely, if a Jew defiantly commits a sin that deserves the death penalty, he must be put to death. He has no recourse to any sacrificial remedy (e.g., Exod 21:12, 14–17; Lev 24:16–17).²³⁷ Again, any first century Jew who had committed such a grievous sin with a “high hand” would scarcely have thought that he could escape capital punishment by offering a sacrifice of any kind as his substitute.²³⁸ In the case of the convicted murderer, the Jewish Bible strictly enjoins the Israelites to refrain from receiving any ransom payment: “Moreover, you shall accept no ransom for the life of a murderer who is subject to the death penalty; a murderer must be put to death” (Num 35:31).²³⁹ Although this injunction is about inter-human relationship rather than the divine-human one, we can reasonably deduce that neither will God receive any ransom payment (i.e., sacrifice) from a premeditated murderer.²⁴⁰

Second, it is by no means certain whether first century Jews considered that the gesture of laying *one* hand on the head of the sacrificial animal signified the transference of the sins of the offerer to the animal. Gordon Wenham poses a question: ‘laying hands on and killing the animal are features common to all the blood sacrifices in Leviticus. If these acts symbolized the transfer

²³⁶ We have evidence that, at least in the Tannaitic period, rabbis saw the sin offering offered by the new mother as neither propitiatory nor expiatory. See Milgrom 1991, 253-4.

²³⁷ Cf. Vaux 1964, 94; Milgrom 1991, 228.

²³⁸ A similar point is made by Brondos 2006, 20-1. However, as discussed above, some Jews might have thought that even grievous sins would be forgiven in Yom Kippur.

²³⁹ As Levine explains, ‘One convicted of premeditated murder must pay with his life; ransom (Hebrew *kōper*) is not allowable’. Levine 2000, 559. See also Dozeman 1998, 266.

²⁴⁰ Concerning the idea of sacrifice as a ransom payment, see our review of Stephen Finlan in chapter 1.

of sin and substitution of the animal's life for the worshipper's in this sacrifice, it is reasonable to suppose that they had a similar significance in the other sacrifices. But then where is the special significance of the purification offering?²⁴¹ It is important to remember that, in the case of the sacrifice for thanksgiving, an offerer made exactly the same gesture as in the case of the sin offering (Lev 3:1–17; 7:12–15).²⁴² It is unlikely that a Jew who wished to express his gratitude to God offered an animal, which was thought to be contaminated with his own sins. Moreover, he would have felt strange eating the flesh of the sacrificial animal, which was an essential part of the thanksgiving offering (Lev 7:15), if this flesh were in fact contaminated with his own sins. It is doubtful, therefore, that those Jews who were familiar with various sacrificial practices would have thought that the gesture of laying *a hand* on the head of the sacrificial animal signified the transfer of the offerer's sin to the sacrificial animal.²⁴³

Third, with the exceptions for the outer sanctum offering (Lev 4:3–21; 6:30)²⁴⁴ and the Yom Kippur offering (Lev 16:27),²⁴⁵ the priests were instructed to eat the flesh of the sin offering (Lev 6:26). De Vaux explains:

²⁴¹ G. Wenham 1979, 93–4. Wenham adopts the term the “purification offering” as the alternative for the “sin offering”. we shall discuss this point in the next chapter.

²⁴² It is important to note that in Septuagintal texts of Leviticus, in the case of peace offerings, it is described that, unlike the MT, an offerer puts *both* hands on the sacrificial animal (cf. Lev 3:2, 8, 13). Hence, some first century Jews who could only read Greek texts might have thought that in the case of peace offerings they should put both hands on sacrificial animals.

²⁴³ Cf. Taylor 1937, 50–1. Philo interprets this gesture as the declaration of innocence. ‘so that as he lays his hands on the victim, he can boldly and with a pure conscience speak in this wise: “These hands have taken no gift to do injustice, nor shared in the proceeds of plunder or overreaching, nor been soiled with innocent blood’ (*Spec Laws* 1.203–4).

²⁴⁴ The “outer sanctum” offering is a type of offering in which the blood manipulation is conducted in the holy place or the outer sanctum. Cf. Gane 2004, 99–101.

²⁴⁵ As a rationale for this exception, Gane indicates two possible reasons. First, in the case of Yom Kippur, the high priest not only served on behalf of an offender, but also offered the sacrifice for his own sins. Since he himself was the offerer, he ‘could not benefit from his own sacrifice’. Second, the sacrificial victims in Yom Kippur might have been considered to ‘absorb evils from the sanctuary’ (2004, 276–7).

The fact that the fat elements are burnt upon the altar and that the flesh of sacrifices for sins of individuals are eaten by priests “as a very holy thing” (Lev. vi. 22) (EVV.29) contradicts the theory which has it that the victim would be laden with the sin of the offerer and would undergo the penalty that was due to him. No, the victim does not become “sin”; it is pleasing to God, who in consideration for this offering removes the sin.²⁴⁶

The book of Leviticus explicitly says that a sacrifice for the sin offering is “most holy” (Lev 6:25), and its flesh is considered to possess contagious holiness (Lev 6:27). How could the flesh of the sin-laden animal have made holy whatever it touched?²⁴⁷ Therefore, unlike the case of the scapegoat ritual, the hand-pressing gesture in blood rituals does not signify the transference of sins from the offerer to the animal. Rather, as Gilders argues: ‘The hand-pressing indexes a relationship between offerer and animal. It is the one who offers the animal who presses his hand on its head’.²⁴⁸ It is important to note that the selection of a proper sacrificial animal involves a long process, as Klawans explains:

It is commonly pointed out that it is fitting for animals offered on the holy altar to be perfect and whole. It is equally important to recognize, however, that this stipulation does not only concern the animal: it requires the offerer to carefully examine the animal destined for sacrifice. These regulations, moreover, don’t only apply at the moment of sacrifice. Prudent shepherds will properly care for their flocks, watching for blemishes that have appeared, trying to prevent others from coming about, and perhaps even

²⁴⁶ Vaux 1964, 94. In this connection, concerning the question of the holiness of sacrificial blood, Kiuchi states that ‘the prescription that only the splashed part of the clothes must be washed [Lev 6:27] suggests that what is washed off is not uncleanness but holiness. For if it were uncleanness, this law might well have prescribed that all the clothes should be washed’ (1987, 136).

²⁴⁷ *Contra* D. P. Wright, who maintains, ‘The fact that the meat appears to pollute vessels in which it is cooked (6:21) and the blood appears to pollute clothing (v 20) shows that the edible portions are impure. The solution to the inconsistency of allowing the pure and holy priests to eat impure offerings is simply to view it as a concession’ (1987, 132). His explanation apparently contradicts Leviticus 6:29: “Every male among the priests shall eat of it; it is most holy”. See also Whybray 1978, 46.

²⁴⁸ Gilders 2004, 81. Cf. Kiuchi 1987, 147.

controlling the breeding of those animals born with defects.²⁴⁹

The selection of an animal that is suitable for dedicating to God is the crucial responsibility of offerers. Therefore, it is no wonder that identifying ownership of a sacrificial animal constitutes an essential part of the process of sacrificing an animal.

Finally, in the case that an offerer could not afford to provide either a sheep or two birds for the sin offering, it was permitted to offer cereal as a sacrifice in lieu of a sacrificial animal (cf. Lev 5:5–10). Eberhart explains thus: ‘As this type of sacrifice consists of vegetal substances which are accompanied by oil, frankincense ([Lev 2] v.1), and salt ([Lev 2] v.13), it is clear that its ritual does not feature any act of slaughter’.²⁵⁰ This point further corroborates our case that death itself does not attain atonement for sins.

In the light of the points enumerated above, the assumption that first century Jews considered that the act of killing itself accomplished atonement for sins is quite dubious. It would have been common sense to many of them that it is not death but life that attains atonement. To be sure, Phinehas’ act of killing the Israelite man who worshipped the Baal of Peor functioned as atonement (cf. Num 25:13). Nevertheless, it is absurd to think that this idolatrous Israelite man was dedicated to God as a holy sacrifice. Rather, in this case, Phinehas performed the covenantal duty of cutting off the man who committed sins with a “high hand”. It was his zeal for the covenant that accomplished atonement for the Israelites. Hence, we cannot consult such a case when considering the meaning of the blood sacrifice for sins. In the case of an unsolved murder described in Deuteronomy 21:1–9, even supposing that the heifer is killed

²⁴⁹ Klawans 2006, 63.

²⁵⁰ Eberhart 2011, 24.

as the substitute for an unknown criminal, this animal should not be regarded as a holy sacrifice.²⁵¹ It must be remembered that, for those who deserve capital punishment (i.e., who commit blasphemous sins with a “high hand”), there is no atoning sacrifice for such sins. This fact apparently contradicts the theory that the offerer of the sacrifice can escape capital punishment by means of killing an animal. The sacrificial system is designed for those who wish to *remain in* the covenant. On the other hand, those who intentionally commit grievous sins are presumably regarded as abandoning the covenant. Therefore, they must be “cut off” from the covenant community. As to the purpose of the sin offering, Gane provides a more persuasive explanation:

The fact that expiatory sacrifices deal with lesser, noncapital offenses shows that the goal of these rituals is not remission of punishment on this level. Rather, there is a higher, more stringent standard: the demand of God’s life-giving holiness, from which the offerer is estranged. Ransom for life could be regarded as “a restoration of those who have fallen, a healing of the terminally ill”. In this sense *kipper* as ransom can also apply to sacrificial purification from ritual impurities, which is most likely based on the concept of death [as the opposite of God’s holiness], and also well-being offerings, which emphasize the positive end of process of restoration to a healthy relationship with God.²⁵²

Gane’s account aptly explains why the sin offering must be offered even on such occasions as childbirth, where it is not a matter of sin. It seems that the purpose of the blood sacrifice is centred upon the concern of maintaining the holiness of God and his people.

We shall now turn to another theory that stresses a different aspect of the purpose of the

²⁵¹ Gese is correct on this point (1981, 98).

²⁵² Gane 2004, 305.

blood sacrifice.

3. 3. 3 Purpose of the blood sacrifice (b): purification from sin?

Among Old Testament scholars, the meaning and function of the sin offering have been a matter of controversy,²⁵³ and the term *sin offering* itself is questioned or even rejected by some influential scholars as a proper designation for this ritual. The sin offering is conducted on such occasions as childbirth, the completion of the Nazirite vow, and the purification of leprous houses (cf. Lev 12:1–8; Num 6:1–21; Lev 14:48–53). In these cases, this ritual is ‘prescribed for persons and objects who cannot have sinned’.²⁵⁴ Hence, Jacob Milgrom advocates an alternative rendering *purification offering* for this ritual, and a good number of scholars follow his lead.²⁵⁵ Milgrom further contends that the purpose of the sin (purification) offering is not to attain the forgiveness of sin committed by the offerer, because sin can be forgiven only through remorseful repentance. He insists that the sole aim of the sin offering is to cleanse the sanctuary:

If the bringer of the sacrifice is not affected, who then is being purified? The telling clue is the destination of the blood of the sacrifice. It is not smeared on the offerer; it is smeared, rather, on the altar. The act is described by the word *kippur*, “purge” (as in Yom Kippur: the Day of Purgation). In commanding that the blood be daubed on the horns of the altar, the text is indicating that the altar is contaminated and must be purified...Blood is the ritual cleanser that purges the altar of impurities inflicted on it by the offerer.²⁵⁶

Such a proposal questions the conventional understanding of “atonement”, which is usually

²⁵³ Here, we are concerned with the blood-sacrificial offering.

²⁵⁴ Milgrom 1991, 253.

²⁵⁵ Ibid., 253-92. E. g. G. Wenham 1979, 89; Hartley 1992, 55-7; Gane 2004, 96-102.

²⁵⁶ Milgrom 2004, 31.

associated with the forgiveness of sins. Milgrom argues that the Hebrew word כָּפַר primarily signifies “purify (*kippēr*)”, though this word occasionally means “ransom (*kōper*)”, that is, an act of redemption from the wrath of God (e.g., Exod 30:12–16; 32:30–34; Num 25:13; 35:31–33).²⁵⁷ Milgrom insists that the former meaning of כָּפַר is the essence of the Jewish concept of “atonement”, which is not about the purification of the sinner, but about that of the sanctuary. Since some New Testament scholars construct Paul’s atonement theology on the basis of Milgrom’s view,²⁵⁸ it is necessary to consider his argument further.

Milgrom’s construction is predicated on his distinctive view that ‘[a] sin committed anywhere will generate impurity that, becoming airborne, penetrates the sanctuary in proportion to its magnitude’.²⁵⁹ This way of understanding the relationship between sin and impurity garners increasing support from scholars who contend that a certain type of sin *generates* impurity, which does not spread through physical contact, but directly defiles the offender, the land, and the sanctuary.²⁶⁰ Frymer-Kensky succinctly summarises this view:

Pollution, the lack of purity, could affect individuals, the temple, the collectivity of Israel, and the land of Israel itself. Some forms of pollution could be eradicated by rituals; the performance of these purifications and expiations was a major function of the priesthood. The pollution caused by the performance of certain deeds, however, could not be eradicated by rituals; Israel believed that the person intentionally committing these acts would suffer catastrophic retribution. Wrongful acts could cause the pollution of the nation and the land of Israel, which could also not be “cured” by

²⁵⁷ Milgrom 1991, 1079–84.

²⁵⁸ E.g., Stowers 1994, 206–13; McLean 1996, 35–8.

²⁵⁹ Milgrom 2004, 31.

²⁶⁰ Cf. Hoffmann 1905; Büchler 1928; Milgrom 1976a; Frymer-Kensky 1983; Klawans 2000; Hayes 2002; Bauckham 2005. The two forerunners of this view, Hoffmann and Büchler, regarded such a defiling force as symbolic or figurative. Moreover, a number of scholars remain unconvinced by the view that such impurity pollutes the land in a concrete sense. See e.g., Maccoby 1999, 193–208.

ritual. There was therefore an ultimate expectation of catastrophic results for the whole people, the “purging” of the land by destruction and exile.²⁶¹

There are ample biblical passages that support this view (e.g., Lev 18:24; 19:31; 20:3; Num 35:33; Ezek 36:17). A growing number of scholars adopt the term “moral impurity” to describe the type of impurity that cannot be eradicated by rituals.²⁶² It is important to stress, however, that both of “ritual” and “moral” impurities would defile what must be kept holy, especially the Temple.²⁶³ As the most grievous consequence of the contamination of the Temple, Olyan explains, ‘Biblical sources understand pollution to be the ultimate threat to what is holy; its presence can even force Yhwh to abandon the place where he resides on earth’.²⁶⁴ From this perspective, Milgrom argues that the whole purpose of the Levitical sacrificial system is to maintain the purity and the sanctity of the Temple, which leads to his conclusion that the Jewish notion of “atonement” is basically synonymous with “purgation”.

Milgrom’s argument casts an important light on an essential aspect of the Jewish sacrificial system. While paying due respect to his great contribution, we should nonetheless note that his argument relies too much on the blood sacrifices in the Yom Kippur rite, where the cleansing of the sanctuary is a primary goal.²⁶⁵ It is also important to note that, except for the Yom Kippur rite (cf. Lev 16:16) and the rituals for ordination (cf. Lev 8:15), there is no explicit statement that the sin offering is designed for cleansing the sanctuary.²⁶⁶ Rather, in most cases, the

²⁶¹ Frymer-Kensky 1983, 399.

²⁶² See our view of Newton in chapter 1. Cf. Klawans 2005, 53-6.

²⁶³ As we saw in the review of Newton in the previous chapter, the notions of sin and impurity were conflated in the mental map of the sectarian communities.

²⁶⁴ Olyan 2000, 39. See also Milgrom 2004, 32; Gane 2004, 408.

²⁶⁵ We shall return to this point in the next section.

²⁶⁶ Hence, Gane contends that ‘*purification offerings throughout the year remove evils from their offeres* rather than from the sanctuary and its sancta’ (2004, 104 [Gane’s emphasis]).

attention of the author of Leviticus is directed to the offerer who needs forgiveness for his sins, rather than to the sanctuary that must be cleansed from the defilement of sin and impurity. In fact, in the prescriptions of the sin offering for both the community and the individual, the instruction always ends with the phrase: “they/he/you shall be forgiven” (cf. Lev 4:20, 26, 31, 35; 5:10, 13, 16, 18). Accordingly, it can be said that the focal point of the sin offering rests on the *forgiveness* of the offerer. If, as Milgrom contends, remorseful conscience suffices to effect forgiveness even *before* the sacrificial ritual, why is the forgiveness of sin declared *after* the sin offering (cf. Lev 5:6–7)? Jenson thus argues:

He [Milgrom] argues that only places, and not people, are purified. However, it [i.e., this type of ritual] is closely related to personal impurity in most of its occurrences, and the person is cleansed as a result of the priest performing atonement (Lev. 12.8; 14:19–20; 16:19, 30; Num. 8.6–7, 15, 21). While blood is not applied to the person requiring purification, there may have been practical reasons for this.²⁶⁷

Thus, Milgrom’s contention that remorseful repentance, without the ritual of blood sacrifice, suffices to attain forgiveness is not convincing.

This point inevitably reduces the force of his argument that the “atonement” attained through the sin offering almost exclusively signifies “purgation”. It must be remembered that the verb כָּפַר denotes both “purify” and “ransom”, which implies that the sacrifice is offered not only to purify the offerer and/or the sanctuary, but also to redeem the offerer from the wrath of God through attaining the forgiveness of sins. As Hartley argues: ‘The blood rites then have a twofold function: to cleanse the sanctuary from the pollution of sin and to release the offerer

²⁶⁷ Jenson 1992, 157. See also Gane 2004, 104; Sklar 2005, 87, n. 23.

from the penalty of his sinning. כפר, “make expiation,” is the achievement of both these goals’.²⁶⁸ In this regard, Sklar conducts a comprehensive survey of the usages of both *kopher* and *kipper* in the Jewish scriptures, and then closely examines Leviticus 17:11. He concludes that it is a false dichotomy to choose either “purify” or “ransom” as the meaning of the word in question. Rather, since the blood of the sacrificial animal is believed to possess its life, ‘life-containing blood both ransoms and purifies’.²⁶⁹ Hence, we should avoid a reductionist approach to the Jewish notion of atonement. Eberhart’s comment captures the point: ‘The sacrificial cult mediates between these separate worlds [i.e., the divine and the human] and allows humans to appear before God. The term *atonement* is a very complex concept, but its outcome is such a mediated encounter that it might, under certain circumstances, imply the expiation of human sin and impurity’.²⁷⁰

In conclusion, in the first century milieu, it is most probable that the blood sacrifice for sins was considered to maintain the holiness and purity of God’s sanctuary, as well as to attain the forgiveness of sins that rescues the offerer from the divine judgement.

3. 3. 4 Purpose of the blood sacrifices for sins in the Yom Kippur rite

Having established the most plausible overall meaning of the blood sacrifice for first century Jews, we now proceed to the special case, the blood sacrifices for sins in the Yom Kippur rite. Fundamental to a proper understanding of the Yom Kippur blood ritual is the fact that the primary concern of this ritual is directed to the sanctuary rather than the people. As Leviticus

²⁶⁸ Hartley 1992, 65.

²⁶⁹ Sklar 2005, 182.

²⁷⁰ Eberhart 2011b, 69.

16:19 reads: “He [the high priest] shall sprinkle some of the blood on it with his finger seven times, and cleanse it and hallow it from the uncleannesses of the people of Israel”. It is important to note that *it is not the people but the sanctuary* that is cleansed from the uncleannesses of the people of Israel. The Yom Kippur blood ritual is a unique one, the purpose of which is explicitly accounted for as the purification of the sanctuary.²⁷¹ As Gane explains, ‘Throughout the year, sacrifices at the Israelite sanctuary removed sins and severe physical ritual impurities from those who offered them there. All this contact with human faults and faultiness meant that the sanctuary itself needed periodic cleansing so that the Holy Lord could continue to reside there. If it became excessively polluted, he would abandon it (cf. Ezek. 9:3; 10:4, 18–19; 11:22–23)’.²⁷² In order to comprehend Gane’s point, it is vital to pay attention to ancient Jewish perceptions of how the Temple could be defiled. For ancient Jews, the contamination of the Temple was caused not only through the direct contact or proximity of persons who were in a state of impurity, but also by their intentional sins. Josephus attests Jews’ concern over the defilement of the sanctuary that resulted from their sins. When Josephus was dispatched as an emissary of the Roman general Titus to persuade his compatriots to repent, he rebuked the Jews in the fortified city for their secret sins. His comment on this occasion reveals how first century Jews considered the relation between the people’s sins and the Temple:

But as for you, what have you done that is blessed by the lawgiver, what deed that he has cursed have you left undone? How much more impious are you than those who have been defeated in the past? Secret sin – I mean thefts, treacheries, adulteries – are

²⁷¹ Another example is found in Lev 8:15.

²⁷² Gane 2004, 270. Gane’s explanation involves the critique of Milgrom’s view on the purpose of ordinary sin offerings conducted through the year. Gane sees that the primary aim of the usual sin/purification offering is directed to the offerer rather than the sanctuary.

not beneath your disdain, while in rapine and murder you vie with each other in opening up new and unheard of paths of vice; aye and *the temple has been the receptacle for all* (ἐκδοχεῖον δὲ πάντων τὸ ἱερόν γέγονεν), and native hands have polluted those divine precincts, which even Romans revered from afar, foregoing many customs of their own in deference of your law.²⁷³

Intriguingly, Josephus describes the Temple as “the receptacle” for the sins of the Jews, which implies that Josephus believes that the Temple somehow absorbs the sins of the covenant people. This is not surprising, since there are unambiguous biblical passages that explicitly state that serious sins defiled the sanctuary (e.g., Lev 20:2–3). With this understanding, Josephus insists that the uncleanness of the Temple was so repulsive to God that he might have abandoned the sanctuary defiled by the sins of his compatriots: ‘The same wonderful sign you had also experience of formerly, when the forementioned king of Babylon made war against us, and when he took the city and burnt the temple; while yet I believe that the Jews of that age were not so impious as you are. Wherefore I cannot but suppose that God is fled out of his sanctuary, and stands on the side of those against whom you fight’ (*J.W.* 5.411–412; cf. *Ant.* 20.165–166). Hence, there are good grounds for assuming that not a few first century Jews understood the primary purpose of the blood sacrifices in the Yom Kippur rite as the cleansing of the sanctuary.²⁷⁴ This point is corroborated by the observation of the actions of the high priest. By either sprinkling or applying directly the blood,²⁷⁵ the high priest is moving from the innermost sanctum (Lev 16:15) to the outer sanctum (v.16; cf. Exod 30:10), and toward the outer altar

²⁷³ Josephus, *J. W.* 5.401–2. Cf. *Pss. Sol.* 2:3; 8:25–26.

²⁷⁴ It is the biblical idea that blood functions as a purifying agent. Leviticus 14:52–53 says: “Thus he [the priest] shall cleanse the house with blood of the bird, and with the fresh water...so he shall *make atonement* (כִּפֹּר) *for the house*, and it shall be *clean* (טָהוּ)”. Cf. McCarthy 1969, 175.

²⁷⁵ Concerning the meaning of blood manipulation in the Yom Kippur rite, Milgrom argues: ‘The daubing of the altar horns purifies the altar, and the seven-fold sprinkling of the altar consecrates it’ (1991, 1037). Gilders endorses this view (2004, 131).

standing in the courtyard (v.18). And finally, ‘the carcasses are incinerated outside the camp. So the entire inner-sanctum purification-offering complex progresses outward through four areas: **inner sanctum→outer sanctum→outer altar→outside the camp**’.²⁷⁶ This linear movement of the high priest in the Temple arena is highly suggestive, and would have provided ancient Jews with a visual image of how their sins and impurities that had been attached to the Temple were thoroughly dealt with through the blood-sacrificial ritual, as Gane aptly comments, ‘Anyone who has swept a room knows that you clean from the inside out’.²⁷⁷

However, there still remains a question. It is clearly articulated that the goal of the Yom Kippur rite is not only to cleanse the sanctuary thoroughly, but also to “make atonement for the people of Israel once in the year for all their sins” (Lev 16:34). There is no question that the scapegoat ritual contributes to this end (cf. Lev 16:22). But do the blood sacrifices for sins also contribute to the atonement for the sins of the people? Scholarly views are divided over this issue. Milgrom argues that ‘it is clear that the blood purges the impurities of the sanctuary and the scapegoat purges the sins of the people’.²⁷⁸ According to Milgrom, the blood ritual for sins

²⁷⁶ Gane 2005, 235 [Gane’s emphasis]; As to the purgation of the outer sanctum, Gane further explains: ‘Having cleansed the inner sanctum, the high priest was to purify the outer sanctum, which is referred to here as the “Tent of Meeting” (16:16b), that is, the rest of the tabernacle. At this point the text abbreviates by referring to the procedural pattern followed in the inner sanctum: “He is to do the same for the Tent of Meeting”. This must mean that the priest was to purge the area and its contents by applying the blood of the bull and of the goat once to a central object – in this case, the incense altar (cf. Ex. 30:10) – and seven times in front of that object’ (2004, 272). In this connection, Kiuchi further suggests, ‘It is remarkable that in vv. 28 and 26 the person who burned the *hattat* flesh outside the camp and the one who handled the Azazel goat are assumed to be unclean, and that the injunction to undergo purificatory rites is formulated in both verses in exactly the same words...This latter fact appears to suggest that the author intended to bring the symbolic meaning of the burning of the *hattat* to bear on what the Azazel goat does, i.e. bearing and removing the guilt’ (1987, 134-5).

²⁷⁷ Gane 2004, 280.

²⁷⁸ Milgrom 1991, 1043. In his support, Milgrom refers to the explanation in the Mishnah: ‘For uncleanness that befalls the Temple and its Hallowed Things through wantonness, atonement is made by the goat whose blood is sprinkled within [the Holy of Holies] and by the Day of Atonement; for all other transgressions spoken of in the Law, venial or grave, wanton or unwitting, conscious or unconscious, sins of omission or of commission, sins punishable by Extirpation or by death at the hands of the court, the scapegoat makes atonement’ (m. *Shevu’ot* 1.6).

and the scapegoat ritual in the Yom Kippur rite have completely different goals: one the cleansing of the Temple, the other the atonement for the sins of the people. His view is not, however, entirely convincing.

The Mishnah's account of the blood sacrifices in Yom Kippur is highly suggestive in this regard: 'R. Simeon says: As the blood of the goat that is sprinkled within [the Holy of Holies] makes atonement for the Israelites, so does the blood of the bullock make atonement for the priests; and as the confession of sin recited over the scapegoat makes atonement for the Israelites, *so does the confession of sin recited over the bullock make atonement for the priests*' (m. *Shevu'ot* 1.7). Interestingly, according to the Mishnah, the high priest confessed his own sins before slaughtering the bull for the blood-sacrificial ritual, although there is no such an instruction in Leviticus 16 (cf. m. *Yoma* 3.8). Whilst we are not certain whether this Mishnah's account accurately reflects the historical practice in the Second Temple era, this comment at least reveals that some rabbis attempted to understand the complex Yom Kippur rite holistically, and that they believed that the blood sacrificial ritual and the scapegoat ritual were inseparably linked with each other.

Moreover, along with the sin offering, the burnt offering was also conducted in the Yom Kippur rite, in order to make "atonement for himself and for his people" (Lev 16:24). In this connection, on the occasion of the inauguration of Aaron's priesthood, he was instructed as follows: "Then Moses said to Aaron, 'Draw near to the altar and sacrifice your sin offering and your burnt offering, and make atonement for yourself and your people; and sacrifice the offering of the people, and make atonement for them; as the Lord has commanded.'" (Lev 9:7). In this case, the combination of the sin offering and the burnt offering achieved atonement for

the priest and the people. It is thus not surprising if first century Jews considered the relationship between the sin offering and the burnt offering in the Yom Kippur rite in the same way.

Taken together these points would suggest that first century Jews did not explore the role and the function of the blood sacrifices for sins in isolation from other rituals such as the scapegoat ritual and the burnt offering. Rather, they would have thought that the blood sacrifices for sins contributed to the dual goal of the Yom Kippur rite as a whole, the cleansing of the Temple as well as the atonement for the sins of the people. We shall consider this point further in the following section.

3. 3. 5 Purpose of the scapegoat ritual in the Yom Kippur rite

The scapegoat ritual is a unique ritual within the Jewish sacrificial system. The blood of the animal plays no role in this ritual, and the animal is not presented to God but sent out to the mysterious “Azazel”. Only in this ritual does the high priest lay *both* hands on the head of the animal, whereas in the blood sacrifice the offerer lays a *single* hand on the head of the sacrifice.²⁷⁹ Leviticus 16:21 clearly states that the high priest not only confesses all the iniquities, all the transgressions, and all the sins of Israel, but also actually “puts” or “gives” (נָתַן in the MT; ἐπιτίθημι in LXX) them onto the goat. Judging by this vivid description, first century Jews most probably took this action as signifying the transference of all the sins of Israel from the representative of Israel (i.e., the high priest) to the scapegoat. In the light of the study of the purgation rites in the ancient Near Eastern world, Milgrom argues, ‘The fact that

²⁷⁹ As mentioned above, however, according to Old Greek texts, an offerer puts *both* hands on the animal in the case of the peace offering.

the text stresses that the hand-leaning rite is executed with both hands is the key to understanding the function of the Azazel goat. It is not a sacrifice, else the hand-leaning would have been performed with one hand...The two-handed ceremonial instead serves a transference function: to convey, by confession, the sins of Israel onto the head of the goat'.²⁸⁰ This reading is confirmed by the description of Leviticus 16:22 in LXX: Καὶ λήμψεται ὁ χίμαρος ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ τὰς ἀδικίας αὐτῶν εἰς γῆν ἄβατον ("And the goat shall *bear on itself their offences* to an untrodden region"). Concerning the identity of Azazel, to whom the scapegoat is to be sent, Levine explains, 'Azazel is most likely the name of a wilderness demon, a goat-demon, similar to the *se'irim*, "goat-demons," mentioned in 17:7 and once worshiped [sic] by Israelites'.²⁸¹ The idea that the scapegoat is sent to a demonic entity makes some scholars think that the scapegoat is not a sacrifice.²⁸² However, as mentioned in the previous chapter, Leviticus 16:5 designates both of the goats, one for the Lord and the other for Azazel, as the sin offering (חטאת in MT; περὶ ἁμαρτίας in LXX), which implies that the scapegoat is also viewed, at least in some sense, as a sacrifice for sins. Those scholars who maintain that the scapegoat is not a sacrifice largely consider that the blood ritual and the scapegoat ritual are independent from each other and serve different purposes. Hence, this issue ultimately hinges on the question of whether the scapegoat ritual is related or unrelated to the blood ritual within the Yom Kippur ritual scheme. Scholars advocate different theories about their relationship. According to Kiuchi, there are three scholarly approaches to this issue:

In the history of the interpretation of Lev 16 there are some exegetes who have

²⁸⁰ Milgrom 1991, 1041. See our discussion on the meaning of the *one*-handed ceremonies in 3.3.2.

²⁸¹ Levine 1989, 251. We shall consider this point further in chapter 4.

²⁸² See the comment of Milgrom just above.

attempted to resolve the problem, assuming the present text describing the two rites. There seem to be three possible approaches to the relationship of the two rites, assuming that the two rites are distinct: 1. The two rites deal with two kinds of sins entirely different from each other. 2. The two rites are functionally continuous in some sense. 3. The Azazel-goat ritual expresses, in a different form, the meaning of the purification rite in the sancta, which has already been completed, without adding anything essentially new.²⁸³

Our concern is which option is most proximate to the view held by first century Jews. Although we have no direct evidence from the first century CE which could decide this issue, it seems that Leviticus 16 itself supports option 2. It is important to note that the word “forgive/forgiveness” is completely missing in Leviticus 16. Through the Yom Kippur rite, the people of Israel are, like the sanctuary, to be “cleansed” rather than to be “forgiven”. On this point, there seems to be an implicit yet substantial relatedness between the sanctuary and the people. Kiuchi thus comments: ‘on the day of Atonement it is assumed that all the Israelites need atonement; all the people stand before the Lord as guilty. Thus if the sancta are purified then, this should not be regarded as separate from the cultic status of the people; when the sancta are purified the people are also purified (cf. v.30)’.²⁸⁴ It is vital to remember that uncleanness of the sanctuary was attributed to the impurities and sins of the people of Israel.²⁸⁵ Hence, option 1 which maintains that the blood-sacrificial ritual and the scapegoat ritual deal with entirely different kinds of sins is not convincing. As regards option 3, we can find no exact correspondence between the blood-sacrificial ritual and the scapegoat ritual in their procedures, which makes it difficult to say that the latter is the symbolic repetition of the former. Indeed, if

²⁸³ Kiuchi 1987, 145.

²⁸⁴ Ibid., 157.

²⁸⁵ Cf. D. P. Wright 1984, 18-9.

the blood sacrifices suffice to complete the atonement for sins, why should the sins of the people be transferred from the high priest to the scapegoat in a tangible manner? Therefore, option 2, which sees the relationship between the two rituals as being functionally continuous, remains most appropriate as the model for the relationship between the two rituals. Hence, we conclude that ‘the most likely view is that the two goats form one *hattat*’.²⁸⁶

In sum, although we cannot be completely certain as to how the first century Jews viewed the role of the scapegoat in relation to the blood sacrifices in the Yom Kippur rite, they would have probably considered these two rituals to be organically connected and to serve the ultimate goal of Yom Kippur, ‘to make atonement for the people of Israel once in the year for all their sins’ (Lev 16:34).

3. 4 Yom Kippur and Jewish eschatological hope: Daniel 9 and 11Q Melchizedek

Since Yom Kippur is an unparalleled day in the national calendar of Israel, a day on which all the sins of Israel are to be erased, it can reasonably be assumed that this day would have fostered the national hope of Israel for the future. It is undeniable that many, not to say all, first century Jews saw the submission of their country to the pagan ‘rulers who claimed divinity and an empire that attributed its success to pagan gods’,²⁸⁷ as problematic. In the Jewish theological tradition, the cause of the subjugation of the holy people to the Gentile powers was not attributed to the powerlessness of their God, but was regarded as the covenantal curse and punishment for their own sins (cf. Judg 10:6–9; Isa 42:24–25). In this theological climate, the

²⁸⁶ Kiuchi, *op cit.*, 148. D. P. Wright also argues, ‘If we understand that the sanctuary acquires impurity through the unholy acts of the people, then the bipartite purification rite on the Day of Atonement makes perfect sense. The blood rite removes the sins themselves – the cause of the impurity. The two evils belong naturally together, and consequently, the two parts of the rite belong together’ (1984, 19).

²⁸⁷ Bauckham 2011, 20.

eschatological Jewish hope for the total defeat of the foreign powers harassing Israel was inevitably linked to the hope of the remission of their sins.²⁸⁸ In other words, the exaltation of Israel over the pagan powers would be realised only after their national sins were forgiven. I submit that the Yom Kippur imagery actually contributed to nurture this Jewish eschatological hope. In order to demonstrate this point, we shall examine Daniel 9 and 11Q Melchizedek. First, however, it is helpful to pay attention to the book of Micah. Here we can find a good example in which the hope of the forgiveness of sins is closely intertwined with the vision of the new Exodus. Since we shall find the same pattern in Daniel 9, the study of Micah serves as a preliminary to the main discussion.

As we saw above, in the midst of his agony and lamentation (Mic 7:1–6), the prophet nevertheless expresses the hope of the New Exodus (Mic 7:15–17), and then goes on to state the hope of the forgiveness of sins:

Micah 7:18–20: Who is a God like you, pardoning iniquity [נִשְׂא עֲוֹן] and passing over the transgression of the remnant of your possession?

He does not retain his anger forever, because he delights in showing clemency.

You will again have compassion upon us; he will tread our iniquities under foot.

You will cast all our sins into the depths of the seas.

You will show faithfulness to Jacob and unswerving loyalty to Abraham, as you have sworn to our ancestors from the days of old.

Andersen and Freedman maintain that there is an allusion to the Exodus story, not least to the memories of God's defeat of the Egyptian army in the sea, and God's pardoning Israel's sins after the golden calf incident:

²⁸⁸ There are ample examples in the Jewish scriptures that envisage the total defeat of the pagan powers. Cf. Isa 45:22–25; Dan 2:36–45; 7:1–28; Joel 3:1–21; Amos 9:11–15; Obad 17–21; Zech 12:1–9.

The original question in Exodus 15 [“Who is like you, O Lord, among the gods?”; Exod 15:11] highlighted Yahweh’s incomparable power in quelling Pharaoh at the Sea of Reeds. The most memorable act of pardoning sin occurred at Sinai/Horeb. The phrase “carrying (away) iniquity” is the only item that Mic 7:18 has in common with the great revelation given [cf. Exod 34:7; **נִשָּׂא עוֹן**] then, so what we have here is only an indirect allusion. Even so, in view of the widespread evidence for this classic credo throughout the Hebrew Bible...there is enough common vocabulary between Exodus 34 and Mic 7:18–20 to support the inference that Micah had the tradition in mind and expected his listeners to recognize it.²⁸⁹

Here, we can see that the hope of the total remission of the sins of Israel is inseparably connected to the national memories of the Exodus story. More important, the future hope of Israel for the new Exodus as well as the total remission of sins is firmly predicated on God’s faithfulness to his covenantal promises made to Abraham and Jacob.

The combination of these themes, the forgiveness of sins, the Exodus, and God’s faithfulness to his patriarchal promises, appears most vividly in Daniel 9. Daniel affirms that “all Israel, those who are near and those who are far away”, are under the “curse” (ἡ κατάρα in LXX) of God due to their ancestral and communal sins (Dan 9:7, 11).²⁹⁰ The most horrible curse of the covenant is the exile (cf. Deut 28:36–37), under which Daniel and all Israel are placed. Daniel supplicates God to accomplish the act of deliverance, as he did for those who were enslaved in Egypt. Thus Daniel entreats: “And now, O Lord our God, who brought your people out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand and made your name renowned even to this day – we have sinned, we have done wickedly”. He goes on to pray: “O Lord, hear; O Lord,

²⁸⁹ Andersen and Freedman 2000, 597-8.

²⁹⁰ Cf. Scott 1993, 198-9.

forgive; O Lord, listen and act and do not delay!” (Dan 9:15,19). Daniel’s prayer is predicated on God’s faithfulness to his covenant, which is in sharp contrast with Israel’s faithlessness to the covenant. Goldingay explains this point as follows:

A prominent motif in the prayer is that any breakdown in relationship between Yahweh and Israel is the responsibility of the latter, not the former. Yahweh is in the right, Israel is in the wrong.²⁹¹ ... Yahweh is justified in the punitive action he has taken (compare the use of צדק in Isa 5:16; 10:22). But the prayer goes on to refer to his צדקת (“right deeds,” v 16), concrete expression of צדקה, acts of faithfulness, commitment, mercy, and deliverance...At the beginning of the plea (v 15), Daniel specifically refers to the exodus, Yahweh’s paradigm צדקה...It is that reference to the exodus which leads into the generalization about Yahweh’s צדקות in the next verse.²⁹²

Daniel lays his hope of the new Exodus on God’s faithfulness and righteousness. Now Daniel expects and prays that the period of “exile” will shortly end after the lapse of seventy years, in accordance with the prophecy of Jeremiah (cf. Jer 25:11–12; 29:10–14; Dan 9:2).

Interestingly, Daniel’s prayer is interspersed with cultic images. As Vogal rightly indicates, the focal point of Daniel’s prayer is the restoration of God’s sanctuary (cf. Dan 9:17).²⁹³ Furthermore, Daniel’s fasting and confession of sins are strongly reminiscent of the practices observed during the period of Yom Kippur (cf. Lev 16:29, 31). The cultic image becomes more prominent in the oracle given to Daniel. It is even possible to find an allusion to Yom Kippur in this oracle. We shall then examine the oracle in question.

In response to Daniel’s prayer, the angel Gabriel is dispatched by God. The angel, however, informs Daniel of the fact that the actual end of the exile would extend far into the future,

²⁹¹ Goldingay 1989, 242.

²⁹² Ibid., 243.

²⁹³ Vogal 2010, 49.

indeed for “seventy-sevenfold”.²⁹⁴ Gabriel declares:

Daniel 9:24: Seventy weeks are declared for your people and your holy city: to finish the transgression, to put an end to sin, and to atone for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal both vision and prophet, and to anoint a most holy place.²⁹⁵

A number of scholars argue that the period of the seventy-weeks (seventy-sevens) in this oracle most probably alludes to the year of Jubilee (seven times seven years).²⁹⁶ It is important to remember that, at the beginning of the year of Jubilee, Yom Kippur must be observed (Lev 25:9). Hence, for those Jews who could have detected the allusion to the Jubilee in this text, the phrase “to atone for iniquity” in this oracle may well have evoked the notion of Yom Kippur. Indeed, we have evidence that supports this conclusion.

11Q Melchizedek (11Q13) provides information on the interpretation of the Danielic 70-weeks prophecy in the late Second Temple period. Fitzmyer argues that “the tenth Jubilee” mentioned in line 7 would probably ‘refer to the end of the 490 years, or “the seventy weeks of years” of Dan 9 24–27’,²⁹⁷ since each Jubilee cycle consists of 49 years (cf. Lev 25:8). If Fitzmyer’s argument is correct, this supports our suggestion that some Jews in the late Second Temple period associated the Danielic 70-week prophecy with the Yom Kippur rite, as the text shows:

11Q13 7–8: in the first week of the jubilee after [the] ni[ne] jubilees. And [the] d[ay] of

²⁹⁴ Cf. Fishbane 1985, 482-3. A similar chronological perspective can be found in the Animal Apocalypse (*1En.* 85-90), 11Q Melchizedek (II 6-8). For other examples, see Scott 2005, 82-103.

²⁹⁵ In Old Greek version of the scripture, the last phrase of verse 9:24 is rendered as “to gladden (εὐφραίνει) the holy of holies”. Grabbe indicates that it was probably due to a scribal error (i.e., misreading of מָשַׁח (“anoint”) as שמח (“rejoice”). Grabbe 1997, 598-9.

²⁹⁶ Cf. Buchanan 1970, 10-1; Fishbane 1985, 482-5; J. J. Collins 1993, 352.

²⁹⁷ Fitzmyer 1967, 29. See also Bacchiocchi 1986, 175-6; Scott 2005, 96.

atonem]ent i[s] the end of [the] tenth [ju]bilee, in which atonement is made for all the Sons of [Light and] the me[n of] the lot of Mel[chi]zedek [...] *w m* upon [the]m *ht* [...] accord[ing to all] their [work]s.²⁹⁸

11Q13 exhibits the exact eschatological pattern of the combination of the forgiveness of sins with the defeat of the enemies of God's people (cf. 11Q13.13). Moreover, it is intriguing that in 11Q13 "the year of the Lord's favour" mentioned in Isaiah 61:2 is identified with the eschatological Jubilee year brought about by Melchizedek (line 9). The author of 11Q13 also associates the messenger who proclaims the gospel in Isaiah 52:7 with the "anointed one" depicted in the 70-week prophecy:

11Q13 15–16: It (is) the day of [peace (about) w]hich [God] spoke [...Isai]ah the prophet who said, [**“How] beautiful on the mountains are the fee[t of] the messen[ger] who an[nounces peace, the messe[nger of good (news) who announces salvati]on, who [s]ays to Zion, ‘Your God [reigns].’”**]

18: And “the messenger” i[s] the anointed of the spir[it about] whom Dan[iel] said, [**“Until (the coming) of an anointed one, a leader, (there shall be) seven weeks.”**].²⁹⁹

The author of this passage further identified the “messenger” depicted in Isaiah 52:7 and the “anointed one” in Daniel 9:25 with the “anointed of the spirit” described in Isaiah 61:1 (line 19).³⁰⁰ The association of the Daniel's 70-weeks prophecy with the Isaianic texts that refer to the servant of the Lord is not surprising.³⁰¹ It is important to stress that Daniel's prayer in

²⁹⁸ Translated by Roberts.

²⁹⁹ Translated by Roberts. It becomes a scholarly consensus that the lacuna refers to Daniel 9:25. Cf. J. J. Collins 2010 [1995], 134.

³⁰⁰ See Miller 1969, 468; Rainbow 1997, 188-9.

³⁰¹ To be sure, Isaiah 61:1-3 is not part of the “servant poem”. However, J. J. Collins states, ‘The prophetic text itself [Isa 61:1-3] is usually assigned to Trito-Isaiah (Isaiah 56-66), but it is universally admitted to be very close to, if not indistinguishable from Deutero-Isaiah (Isaiah 40-55)’ (1997, 225-6). The author of Luke/Acts clearly applied both Isaiah 61:1-3 and the fourth servant poem to Jesus (Luke 4:16-21; Acts 8:26-39).

9:4–19 is the plea for the termination of the period of the wrath of God, which signifies the end of the exile, as ‘the Exile was *the* great example of the wrath of God’.³⁰² Because the central theme of Isaiah 40–55 and 61 also concerns ‘the return of the exiles from Babylon and the restoration of the community in Judah’,³⁰³ it would have been natural for ancient Jewish exegetes to connect these prophetic oracles.³⁰⁴ Scott succinctly depicts the essence of 11Q13 as follows: ‘Therefore, 11Q Melchizedek represents an eschatological text that interprets the restoration of Israel in Isa 61:1–3 within the framework of a sabbatical chronology that understands the 70 weeks of years in Daniel 9 in terms of jubilee years in Leviticus 25’.³⁰⁵ In 11Q13, the imagery of Yom Kippur formed some of the essential building blocks for the manifestation of the Jewish eschatological hope.

4. Conclusion

4. 1 Differences between Passover and Yom Kippur

It has been demonstrated that Passover and Yom Kippur would have had significantly different meanings for first century Jews. Falk’s comments on the *Festival Prayers* succinctly epitomise the general attitude of Jews toward Yom Kippur and Passover respectively, ‘The prayer for the Day of Atonement focuses on guilt, affliction, repentance, and mercy. The Passover prayer

³⁰² A. T. Hanson 1957, 39 [Hanson’s italic]. See LXX of Daniel 8:19: “And he said to me, ‘Lo, I am telling you what will take place *at the end of the wrath against the sons of the people*, for yet will remain the appropriate time of consummation’”. “The wrath against the sons of the people” clearly refers to the “Exile” (cf. Dan 9:16).

³⁰³ J. J. Collins 1997b, 229.

³⁰⁴ On this point, Blenkinsopp aptly states: ‘In the third vision (Dan 9:1–27), Daniel’s confession of sin, spoken in the name of Israel past and present (9:1–19), is similar in form and language to the communal lament of Isa 63:7–64:11 (Eng. 12)’ (2006, 16).

³⁰⁵ Scott 2005, 96.

alludes to the Exodus, God's miracles of deliverance, and the election of Israel'.³⁰⁶ Indeed, these two Jewish convocations differ significantly from each other, being nearly oppositional in their theological characters and in the ways in which they were practised.

We can enumerate three notable differences between Passover and Yom Kippur. First, according to Philo and Josephus, at the time of the Passover feast, a multitude of Jewish adult males around the world participated in the sacrificial ritual in the Temple.³⁰⁷ In the case of Yom Kippur, on the other hand, the high priest was almost the only player who conducted the complex rituals in the Temple. Second, it was the duty for ancient Jews to eat the meat of the paschal victims in the Passover feast (cf. *Spec. Laws* 2.148), whereas there was a solemn instruction to practise fasting with prayer during the time of Yom Kippur. In fact, neither the high priest nor any of the other priests ever ate the meat of the victims that were sacrificed to cleanse the sanctuary through their blood (cf. Lev 16:25, 27), though they did eat the meat of the animals offered as a regular sin offering (cf. Num 29:8–11).³⁰⁸ Third, whereas practising the Passover feast was, in a sense, a dramatic re-enactment of the Passover event commemorating their ancestors' deliverance out of Egypt (cf. *Ant.* 17.213),³⁰⁹ the Yom Kippur rite could be viewed as a visualised demonstration of the banishing of all Israel's sins and impurities from the covenantal sphere of God's people. Hence, whereas the Passover feast was celebrated in a jubilant atmosphere appropriate for expressing gratitude to God, the fasting during Yom Kippur was to be observed in a mode of penitence appropriate for meditating on sins committed in the

³⁰⁶ Falk 1998, 207.

³⁰⁷ See Josephus, *J.W.* 6.422–7.

³⁰⁸ According to the Mishnah, 'If the Day of Atonement fell on a Sabbath the loaves were shared out at evening. If it fell on a Friday the he-goat of the Day of Atonement was consumed at evening' (m. *Menahoth* 11.7)

³⁰⁹ Vaux indicates, 'It is a religious "act"; one "performs", [עשה], the Passover [Exod 12:28]' (1964, 3).

past and for imploring God to forgive these sins.³¹⁰

In the light of these marked differences, it is difficult to imagine that first century Jews would be likely to confuse the aim of Passover with that of Yom Kippur such that they might imagine that their sins were forgiven through slaughtering and eating the paschal lambs at the time of the Passover feast. Unlike the case of Yom Kippur, there is no record from the first century CE that Jews spent time on either penitence or fasting during the Passover feast, actions which were thought as prerequisites for the forgiveness of sins. Rather, the paschal lamb can best be categorised as *a thanksgiving offering*, celebrating the deliverance out of Egypt, whereas, in the Exodus narrative, it seems to function as *an apotropaeic sacrifice*, whose blood marked the Israelite households out to protect them from God's judgement.

4. 2 The strong link between Passover and Yom Kippur

Despite the marked differences between them, however, we should not overlook the fact that both Passover and Yom Kippur reinforced in Jews the centrality of the covenant in their national life. By observing the Passover feast, Jews had constantly been reminded that their God was faithful to his covenant and its promises. His faithfulness to the covenant continued as a source of the national hope of deliverance throughout the late Second Temple period (e.g., Dan 9:15–19; Luke 1:54–55, 72). Likewise, through observing Yom Kippur in fasting and penitence, Jews had been assured of their covenant status as the people of the one creator God.

Moreover, the Jewish hope for the deliverance from the yoke of gentile powers was deeply

³¹⁰ In *Jubilees*, it is thus written: 'And this day is decreed so that they might mourn on account of their sins and on account of all their transgressions and on account of all their errors in order to purify themselves on this day, once a year' (*Jub.* 34.19).

linked with their aspiration for the forgiveness of sins (cp. Luke 1:71, 77), since their subjugation to foreign empires was often considered as the result of their covenantal breach (cf. 2Macc 6:12–17; 7:32–38). Hence, in Jewish theological imagination, Passover and Yom Kippur could have been intertwined with each other in their eschatological hope. We can find such an example in 11Q Melchizedek (11Q13), where the Exodus theme is inseparably connected with that of Yom Kippur. Within a covenantal framework, it is indeed likely that Passover and Yom Kippur were tightly bound together in the hearts of first century Jews.

Chapter 3: Passover and Yom Kippur motifs in Paul's letters

1. Introduction

Having studied how first century Jews understood Passover and Yom Kippur respectively, we now consider how this might apply to Paul, concentrating on two texts: 1 Corinthians 5:7 and Romans 3:25. A number of commentators identify connections between *πάσχα* and the Passover feast in 1 Corinthians 5:7, and between *ἱλαστήριον* and Yom Kippur in Romans 3:25. Nonetheless, in the light of our study in the previous chapter, there still remain some critical points to be explored.

As regards 1 Corinthians 5:7, scholars' attention is often directed at one particular question: What sort of sacrificial idea lies behind the word *πάσχα*? For instance, some scholars argue over whether *πάσχα* can possibly signify a sacrifice for sins or not.³¹¹ Yet the question itself may be misguided, since Paul's aim here is not to explain a definite salvific effect of Jesus' death by comparing Jesus to a sacrificial animal. Rather, Paul introduces this term for the purpose of foreshadowing his further exhortations. Our following discussion will clarify this point.

Concerning Romans 3:25, while quite a few scholars argue over the meaning of *ἱλαστήριον* in relation to the Yom Kippur sacrifice, it is rather surprising that they draw little attention to the significance of *αἷμα* in the same verse, despite the importance and centrality of "blood" in the Yom Kippur rite. In the Yom Kippur blood sacrifice, it is the life-blood that attains the redemption of God's people from the wrath of God. We shall contend that Paul employs the

³¹¹ See our review of Dunn and McLean in chapter 1.

word *αἷμα* with a solid understanding of the role of “blood” in Jewish sacrificial practices.

2. Paul’s use of *πάσχα* in 1 Corinthians 5:7

2. 1 Introduction

In 1 Corinthians 5:7, Paul declares that Christ was slaughtered as our “paschal lamb (*πάσχα*)”.³¹² A close study of this statement gives us an important insight into the question of how Paul uses sacrificial imagery. Broadly speaking, scholars hold four exegetical opinions with regard to the meaning of *πάσχα*. That is to say, if Paul’s employment of this term reflects the normal Jewish perception of the role of the paschal lamb in either the original Passover event or the Passover feast, there must be two options: First, Jesus was sacrificed in order that his blood could be used for an apotropaic end (i.e., warding off God’s wrathful judgement). Second, Jesus was sacrificed in order that his flesh could be eaten as the Passover meal. Moreover, these two options could overlap each other, since the paschal lamb assumed both roles in the original Passover event.

Another possibility is that the meaning with which Paul invests this word goes beyond the conventional Jewish understanding of *πάσχα*. In this case, there are another two exegetical options: First, Jesus was sacrificed as a sin offering. Second, Jesus was sacrificed in order that his blood could be used for the ratification of the new covenant. None of these four are, however, fully convincing.

³¹² The Greek verb *θύω* can signify either “slaughter” or “sacrifice”. Both renderings seem to be possible in this context.

2. 2 For averting the wrath of God?

Concerning the exact meaning of *πάσχα* in 1 Corinthians 5:7, some scholars consider that Paul has the original Passover story in mind, and that he identifies Jesus with the paschal lamb slaughtered immediately before the Israelites escaped from the land of Egypt. Finlan thus argues: ‘This [1Cor 5:7b] summons up the image of Christ’s blood averting the wrath of God just as the apotropaic blood on the doorposts caused the Angel of Death to “pass over” the Jews’.³¹³ This interpretation, however, poses some exegetical problems.

First, if Paul sees the blood of the paschal lamb as the means of averting the wrath of God, it is curious that in a context where he clearly does refer to the wrath of God he uses a very different image. It is important to note that, whilst Paul uses the word *ὀργή* twelve times in the epistle to the Romans (Rom 1:18; twice in 2:5, 8; 3:5; 4:15; 5:9; twice in 9:22; 12:19; 13:4, 5), he never uses this term in his two letters to the Corinthians. Granting that Paul considers that the primary purpose of slaughtering the paschal lamb is to avoid the wrath of God, Romans 3:25 seems to be an ideal opportunity to use the Passover motif. However, in Romans 3:25, instead of using Paschal language, Paul speaks in terms of the *ἱλαστήριον*. Paul’s choice of *ἱλαστήριον* rather than *πάσχα* in Romans 3:25 considerably undermines the force of Finlan’s argument.

There is another reason why the apotropaic construal is not convincing. Whilst it is true that the people of Israel did put the blood of the paschal victims on the two doorposts and the lintel of their houses in the Passover event (cf. Exod 12:7), there is no record that ancient Jews repeated this practice in the annual Passover feast.³¹⁴ Moreover, the Passover sacrifice in the

³¹³ Finlan 2004, 70. In line with, e.g., Hays 1997; Soards 1999, 115; Keener 2005, 50; Eberhart 2011b, 119-21.

³¹⁴ See chapter 2.2.2.

feast should be viewed as a thanksgiving offering in the first century milieu. It is therefore unlikely that Jews in Paul's time considered that sacrificing the paschal lambs in the feast functioned as an apotropaic end of whatever kind. Hence, if Paul has the Passover *feast* rather than the original Passover *event* in mind (cf. 1Cor 5:8), his point here is not to explain the apotropaic role of Jesus' death. Moreover, the surrounding context strongly suggests that the thrust of Paul's argument is not to expound how the Corinthians have avoided the wrath of God, but to warn them that their immoral way of life could incur God's wrath on the whole community (cf. 1Cor 10:8), and thus to urge them to expel the immoral one from the holy community (cf. 1Cor 5:11–13).

For the reasons presented above, the interpretation that the usage of *πάσχα* intends to evoke the image of the apotropaic blood is not sound.

2. 3 Preparation for the Passover meal?

As to the nature of the Lord's Supper that Paul mentions in 1 Corinthians 11, Bruce Winter argues that Paul and his addressees understood it as a new Passover meal, on the grounds of the thematic connection of this passage with Paul's use of Paschal language in chapters 5 and 10 (in particular, "the cup of blessing which we bless" in 10:16), both of which are situated in a Passover context.³¹⁵ Winter's interpretation is based on the supposition that Paul modelled the Lord's Supper on the Last Supper celebrated by Jesus himself as a Passover meal. It is true that Paul's account of the Last Supper exhibits the most conspicuous parallels to the Synoptic accounts, which strongly suggests that both Paul and the Synoptic writers utilised the same or a

³¹⁵ Winter 2001, 150.

similar tradition.³¹⁶ Thiselton endorses this view: ‘the issue of whether or not a Passover frame is presupposed as the framework of interpretation for last supper and the Lord’s Supper (and its tradition) has a decisive effect upon the exegesis of vv. 23b-25 [of 1 Corinthians 11]. In our view, the main factors customarily cited to establish a Passover framework remain utterly convincing’.³¹⁷ What then would be an implication of this for our understanding of 5:7? As we have studied, the paschal lamb was, in the Passover feast, slain so as to be eaten at the Passover meal, as Pitre comments ‘in the Old Testament and ancient Jewish tradition, the sacrifice of the Passover lamb was not completed by its death. It was completed by *eating the flesh of the lamb* that had been slain’.³¹⁸ From this point of view, Paul would have meant that Christ was sacrificed as the paschal lamb as a preparation for the Passover meal. Pitre goes on to argue:

In both of these statements [1Cor 5:7–8 and 1Cor 10:16], Paul is referring to the Lord’s Supper. In the first quotation, he not only identifies Jesus as the new “Passover lamb” who has been sacrificed. He also bases the celebration of the Eucharistic “feast” on Jesus’ identity as the lamb. Perhaps this is why, in the second quotation, Paul can affirm without hesitation that the Eucharist is a real communion in the body and blood of Jesus. For Paul, who sees the Lord’s Supper through Jewish eyes, it is nothing less than a new Passover.³¹⁹

Attractive as this view is, it would be an overstatement to say that Paul *refers* to the Lord’s Supper in 1 Corinthians 5:7.

It must be pointed out that the immediate context in which Paul develops his argument is

³¹⁶ It is not in the scope of our research to compare Paul’s Eucharistic account with those of the Synoptic Gospels. In this regard, see the detailed discussions of Jeremias (1966, 138-203), Marshall (1980, 30-56), and Hengel (1981, 72-4).

³¹⁷ Thiselton 2000, 874.

³¹⁸ Pitre 2011, 74 [Pitre’s italics].

³¹⁹ Ibid., 76. A similar case is made by Wheaton in his study of John’s Gospel (2009, 58-93).

not the Passover feast but the feast of Unleavened Bread. Although these two feasts virtually coalesced in the Second Temple era (Cf. Philo *Spec. Laws* 2.162), there was a clear distinction between the two. Whilst the Passover meal was celebrated only on the night after the paschal lamb was slaughtered, the unleavened bread was eaten for the subsequent seven days (cf. Exod 12:15; 13:6–7). Paul herein highlights the unleavened bread, rather than the Paschal flesh in the Passover meal. The question Paul raises here is whether this unleavened bread is made of the old yeast (malice and evil) or the new yeast (sincerity and truth). Thus, it is difficult to detect here an allusion to the Lord's Supper, where the bread (i.e., the body of Christ; 1Cor 10:16; 11:23–24) is consumed. It seems, rather, that Paul's point of emphasis lies elsewhere. In this regard, Sampley provides a helpful comment on Paul's intention in mentioning the paschal lamb: 'Paul's view of Christ's death in 5:7 fits his usual pattern of considering it a past, finished, defining event. He casts it here in Passover garb to sharpen his readers' sense that the time for cleansing the house of yeast has passed. His rhetoric, therefore, creates a sense of urgency in dealing with the man who has his father's wife'.³²⁰ Sampley's proposal is insightful, and urges us to understand the reference to the paschal lamb within the chronological framework of the complex of the Passover/Unleavened Bread feasts. Hence, the reason why Paul refers to Christ as *πάσχα* is not to explain the soteriological value of the body of Christ, but to inform his addressees of the fact that the time for slaughtering the paschal lamb has already passed.

2. 4 Sacrifice for sins?

Historically, many Pauline scholars have interpreted 1 Corinthians 5:7 as referring, or at least

³²⁰ Sampley 2002, 849.

alluding, to the sin offering.³²¹ This interpretation is tempting since it seems to be consistent with Paul's other statement in the same epistle that clearly indicates that Christ died for sins (cf. 1Cor 15:3).³²² Moreover, as suggested above, it might have been the case that the image of the paschal lamb and the concept of the atonement for sins had been conflated in the very early stage of the Christian movement.³²³ Nonetheless, there are two problems with this reading.

First, as we discussed in depth in the previous chapter, it would have been common knowledge among first century Jews that the sacrifice for the Passover feast was not a sin offering. First century Jews who experienced firsthand both the paschal ritual in the Temple and an ordinary sin offering would likely recognise the marked difference between the two. For instance, in the case of the sin offering, an offerer who commits sins is prohibited from consuming the flesh of the sacrificial animal, whereas it is the duty of an offerer to eat the paschal meat. To count the fact that Paul was once extremely zealous for his ancestral traditions (Gal 1:14; Phil 3:5–6), it is unlikely that he was ignorant of such a difference. Hence, we cannot simply presuppose that Paul taught the Corinthian Christians to identify the paschal lamb with a sacrifice for sins.

Second, it is important to note that Paul exhorts his addressees to celebrate (ἐορτάζω) this event. Is it not rather strange, however, that Paul boldly encourages them to celebrate the sin offering, in the light of the fact that Jews in the first century would have observed the sin offering, not least Yom Kippur, in penitence? To be sure, we cannot exclude the possibility that Paul might have meant: "Let us celebrate the fact that our sins are forgiven because of the sin

³²¹ E.g., Grosheide 1953, 126; Schoeps 1961, 133; Ridderbos 1977, 187-8; Marshall 1980, 77.

³²² Although First Corinthians 15:3 does not necessarily mean that Christ died as the sin offering.

³²³ See our review of James Dunn in chapter 1.

offering of Jesus as the paschal lamb!” The real problem with this reading, however, is that it does not fit the immediate context well. Paul’s intention is not to urge them to celebrate the fact that their previously committed sins are forgiven through the sin offering of Christ, but to remind them of the danger that their ongoing sinning as holy ones (*ἁγίοις*; cf. 1Cor 1:2) would have serious consequences (cf. 1Cor 5:9–13). Considering these various points, the view that Paul associates *πάσχα* with the sin offering is not very convincing.

2. 5 Ratification of the new covenant?

The fourth exegetical option is to view *πάσχα* as referring to the sacrifice that ratifies the new covenant in its blood. Hogeterp proposes, ‘1Cor 5:6–8 echoes the Christian celebration of Passover in remembrance of Jesus Christ whose sacrifice constitutes a new covenant (1Cor 11:25)’.³²⁴ The strength of this rendering rests on the fact that Paul clearly associates the blood of Christ with the institution of the new covenant. It is also important to remember that the Passover feast is often connected with the inauguration and renewal of the covenant in the Jewish scriptures (Cf. Exod 40:17; Num 9:1–5; Josh 5:1–12; 2 Kgs 23:1–23; 2 Chr 29:10; 30:1–27; 34:29–35:18).

Despite these advantages, it still suffers from some weaknesses. The theme of covenant-making does not emerge at all in Paul’s argument in chapter 5. While both the Passover event and the ratification of the Sinai covenant are climactic events within the Exodus story, they are distinguishable from each other. The observation of the Passover/Unleavened Bread feasts is not the celebration for the ratification of the Sinai covenant, but for the

³²⁴ Hogeterp 2006, 336.

commemoration of the Passover event. Incidentally, the sacrifice for the ratification of the Sinai covenant was not a lamb but an ox (cf. Exod 24:5). Taking these points together, it is unlikely that Paul expected that the reference to the paschal lamb in verse 5:7 would evoke the image of the ratification of the covenant in the minds of his addressees. Hence, this rendering does not fit the immediate context.

2. 6 Alternative view: *πάσχα* as a signpost

Despite some attractiveness in each of the preceding cases, all the four options examined above fall short of providing a decisive interpretation. Paul's understanding of Jesus' death is indeed complex, which is associated with the elements of the redemption from God's wrath, the Eucharistic meal, the atonement for sins, and the ratification of the new covenant. Nonetheless, none of them seems to play a central role in 1 Corinthians 5:7.

While there remains a possibility that Paul uses this term with a different connotation that we have not detected, it seems more plausible that Paul does not intend a single, exclusively sacrificial meaning when he uses the word *πάσχα* here. Rather, this word functions as a *signpost* that anticipates Paul's further discussions. For those who experienced a series of Jewish feasts, it was a given fact that the feast of Unleavened Bread was to be observed seamlessly in conjunction with the Passover feast. Thus, the act of slaughtering *πάσχα* functioned as a signal that urged participants of the feast to move to the next stage of the complex feast of Passover/Unleavened Bread.³²⁵

³²⁵ In another instance, in his exhortation on the resurrection of the dead, Paul seems to connect Jesus' resurrection with the feast of the Sheaf of the First Fruits (1Cor 15:20, 23; cf. Exod 23:16-19; Lev 23:9-14; Num 15:20-21). Philo regards this feast as a part of the spring feasts (*Spec. Laws* 2.162). Supposing that Paul shares Philo's understanding, then he places Jesus' death (Passover) and resurrection (First

In a similar vein, the mention of *πάσχα* at this point prepares the way for Paul's further exhortation in following chapters. Richard Hays states, 'Paul assumes not only that his Corinthian readers will understand this symbolism [of the Passover] but also that they will identify metaphorically with Israel'.³²⁶ Paul exhorts his addressees to identify themselves with the people of a new Exodus, who are on the way to the promised inheritance. If Paul suggests that the Corinthian Christians have already participated in the new Passover event through observing the new Passover/Unleavened Bread feasts,³²⁷ they are now, in the light of the narrative sequence of the Exodus story, wandering in the wilderness.³²⁸ The particular perspective that sees the wilderness wandering of the ancient Israelites as the period of "testing" often appears in Second Temple literature,³²⁹ in both *4QPsalms Pesher^a* (4QpPs^a) and the epistle to the Hebrews. The wilderness story is presented as an aid to comprehending the significance of the present situation of the eschatological people of God.³³⁰ David Moffitt argues, 'The period of the wilderness wandering can be used as an eschatological metaphor for the penultimate age. The "last days" can be described in terms of the testing during the time of wandering that sorted out those who would go into the land'.³³¹ Paul herein seems to employ the same eschatological framework, and he exploits the symbolic significance of the paschal lamb for the Exodus story, so as to place his readers in the new Exodus story, where they themselves are to play an active role as the people of God.

Fruits) within the framework of the Jewish vernal festival cycle. Cf. Davies 1980 [1948], 106.

³²⁶ Hays 1997, 83.

³²⁷ As Jews in Paul's time participated in the historic Passover event through observing the Passover/Unleavened Bread feasts. See chapter 2, 2. 2.

³²⁸ Cf. Ciampa and Rosner 2010, 443-4.

³²⁹ Wis 11:2-10; Philo, *Prelim. Studies* 163-177; Josephus, *Ant.* 3.15. See esp., M. Thiessen 2009.

³³⁰ 4QpPs^a 2:4-3:2; Heb 3:7-11.

³³¹ Moffitt 2011, 90. See also J. J. Collins 1997a, 57.

In the light of these points, Paul's intention in referring to *πάσχα* here does not seem to explicate the soteriological meaning of Jesus' death by highlighting any sacrificial value of the paschal lamb. Rather, by associating his death with the Passover feast, Paul evokes the Exodus narrative, which reminds the addressees of the fact that they are in τὰ τέλη τῶν αἰώνων (the last days; 1Cor 10:11), which are, in Jewish apocalyptic thinking, characterised as the time of "purity" (cf. 1Cor 5:9–13; 6:11) as well as "testing" (cf. 1Cor 10:13) for God's eschatological people.³³² In order to drive this point home to the Corinthian Christians, Paul introduces two Jewish themes that follow the event of slaughtering *πάσχα*: One is the feast of Unleavened Bread within the Jewish festival cycle, in which any old yeast, especially sexual impurity, must be eradicated. The other is the episode of the wandering in the wilderness within the Exodus narrative, in which people must persevere throughout their testings. Moreover, since the Exodus event itself was the confirmation of God's faithfulness to his covenant, to recall this story would give a sense of assurance concerning God's ongoing faithfulness to his covenant people in the time of testing (1Cor 10:13). In sum, a most appropriate way to understand the word *πάσχα* is to see it within the Exodus narrative, which has been celebrated in the Passover feast.³³³

3. Paul's use of sacrificial terms in Romans 3:25

3. 1 Introduction

Romans 3:25 is arguably the most controversial verse for the study of Paul's usage of sacrificial imagery. A cluster of sacrificial terms, such as *ἱλαστήριον*, *αἷμα*, *ἁμάρτημα*, appears in this

³³² Cf. Moffitt 2014, 362-8.

³³³ I shall argue that this reading can be applicable to Galatians 4:1-11 in chapter 5.

condensed passage. Though scholarly debate on this verse often centres on defining the meaning of ἱλαστήριον (either “a sacrifice of atonement” or “a place of atonement”),³³⁴ it is not our primary concern to settle this weighty issue. Whichever rendering scholars may give, they generally agree on the point that Paul here has the blood sacrifice, most probably the Yom Kippur blood sacrifice, in mind.³³⁵ Instead, we will concentrate our attention on the function and meaning of αἷμα in the same verse.

Despite the centrality of blood in Jewish sacrificial practices, its significance in Paul’s soteriology has often been neglected or even denied. Not a few scholars view the “blood” of Christ as simply a metonym for Christ’s bloody death on the cross or the salvific effect of his violent death. Behm’s view is representative of this line of interpretation: ‘The interest of the NT is not in the material blood of Christ, but *in His shed blood as the life violently taken from Him*. Like the cross...“the blood of Christ” is simply another and even more graphic phrase for the death of Christ in its soteriological significance’.³³⁶ Penna endorses Behm’s opinion with respect to the Pauline letters: ‘insofar as it concerns the Pauline letters, I believe I must subscribe to it [Behm’s view]’.³³⁷ Penna goes on to argue:

While such a treatment [i.e., understanding the “blood” in the light of Old Testament sacrificial texts] has the value of placing the “blood of Christ” against the background of an undeniable sacrificial influence, it brings the risk of suggesting that the death of Jesus can be understood in Jewish terms, can be absorbed back into the Jewish cultic system, thus overemphasizing the element of blood in its physical and material aspect, and thus isolating it from the larger context of the death on the cross, and its

³³⁴ See our scholarly reviews in chapter 1.

³³⁵ There are some notable exceptions, however. For instance, Stowers denies any cultic allusion in this passage (1994, 209).

³³⁶ Behm, “αἷμα, αἵματεκχυσία,” *TDNT* 1:172-7 [my italics].

³³⁷ Penna 1996, 2:40.

motivation'.³³⁸

Most Pauline scholars, however, explore the meaning of ἱλαστήριον against the Jewish sacrificial background. Although the exact meaning of ἱλαστήριον is contested among Pauline scholars, hardly any scholar denies a sacrificial connotation in this word. Given that ἱλαστήριον evokes a certain sacrificial image, it is extremely difficult to deny a sacrificial connotation in the term αἷματι, juxtaposed to this very word. Therefore, the argument that seeks to negate any sacrificial connotation in the word αἷμα is hardly convincing. The life-blood of the sacrificial animal assumes the central role in the sin offering, which both propitiates God's wrath and purifies what must be kept holy.³³⁹ It is our contention that Paul uses the term αἷμα with this Jewish understanding of life-blood.

3. 2 Meaning of αἷμα in Romans 5:9

Prior to considering the meaning of this term in Romans 3:25, it is helpful to study another usage of this word in Romans 5:9, since there is a noticeable parallelism between Romans 3:24–25 and verse 5:9:

Romans 3:24–25: δικαιούμενοι...ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ ὃν πρόθετο ὁ θεὸς ἱλαστήριον διὰ [τῆς] πίστεως ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἷματι...

Romans 5:9: ...δικαιωθέντες νῦν ἐν τῷ αἷματι αὐτοῦ...

As a number of commentators argue, it is appropriate to understand the statement in Romans

³³⁸ Ibid., 26.

³³⁹ Cf. Hicks 1959, 18.

5:9 as an abbreviation of the more detailed statement in Romans 3:24–25.³⁴⁰ Hence, the study of αἷμα in Romans 5:9 is crucially important to the understanding of the same word in Romans 3:25.

Romans 5:9–10: Much more surely then, now that we have been justified by his blood (ἐν τῷ αἵματι αὐτοῦ), will we be saved through him from the wrath of God. For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son (διὰ τοῦ θανάτου τοῦ υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ), much more surely, having been reconciled, will we be saved by his life.

The word αἷμα in 5:9a is often construed as a synonym for the word θάνατος in 5:10a. As Schreiner claims, ‘We should not distinguish between Christ’s death in verse 10 and his blood in verse 9...Both terms are sacrificial in character, stemming from Levitical terminology’.³⁴¹ However, it must be remembered that Paul associates Jesus’ death not with justification but with reconciliation. Apart from the problem of simply equating “justification” with “reconciliation”,³⁴² this way of reading contradicts the Levitical notion of sacrifice. As discussed in the previous chapter, the “blood” of the sacrificial animal must be brought near to the presence of God (i.e., to the various altars in the Temple) as a holy sacrifice (e.g., Lev 4:5, 7, 16).³⁴³ Since “death” is most detestable to God, anything that literally or symbolically carries death must be excluded from the presence of God. Gane’s account of Numbers 19 clarifies this

³⁴⁰ E.g., Cranfield 1975, 265-6; Martin 1981, 135-43.

³⁴¹ Schreiner 1998, 264.

³⁴² We cannot simply equate “justification” with “reconciliation”. While these two notions would have closely been connected in Paul’s mind, there is a subtle yet substantial difference between them. Cranfield comments, ‘In the NT they [καταλλάσσειν and its cognates] are used with reference to the relation of God and men only in the Pauline epistles (cf. [Rom] 11.15; 2Cor 5.18-20), and there they express the quality of personal relationship which is integral to God’s justification of men but which the word “justification” does not as such necessarily suggest’ (1975, 267) [Cranfield’s emphasis].

³⁴³ As Philo states, ‘For the blood may truly be called a libation of the life-principle’ (*Spec Laws* 1.205).

point:

Needless to say, the primary source of corpse contamination was the dead body, the dead body itself. Because the person was dead, the body could only convey ritual impurity to other persons or objects within the enclosed space where it was located or if someone touched it out in the open ([Lev] 19:14–16, 18). Even though ritual impurity contracted from a corpse by a live person was secondary, it was serious. This makes sense in light of the rationale underlying the ancient Israelite system of physical ritual impurities: Mortality involved in the birth-death cycle of human beings is opposed to divine holiness, which is characterized by life...What could represent mortality more than a corpse?³⁴⁴

By definition, it is impossible to bring “death” into the presence of God as a sacrifice, since death is incompatible with the holiness of God. As Moffitt argues, ‘In Levitical terms, to offer blood to God is not an act of offering death to God or of bringing death into God’s presence—a notion that would be abhorrent’.³⁴⁵ From the Levitical viewpoint, the blood of the sacrificial animal does not signify “death”.³⁴⁶ Hence, unless the Levitical sacrificial connotation of the term *αἷμα* is abandoned in Romans 5:9 as well as in 3:25, we cannot construe this word as a synonym for the word *θάνατος*.

It is also important to note that Paul clearly associates the *resurrection* of Jesus with justification of believers (Rom 4:25).³⁴⁷ While it is not easy to grasp in what sense the

³⁴⁴ Gane 2004, 658-9.

³⁴⁵ Moffitt 2011, 219.

³⁴⁶ How then should we consider the element of “death” in a blood-sacrificial ritual? Kiuchi suggests, ‘The eaten *hattat* conveys holiness within the sanctuary, whereas the burnt *hattat* probably conveys holiness within the sanctuary but defiles, like the Azazel goat, its handler outside the camp. In a deeper dimension it is the death which the sacrificial animal symbolizes that causes both the holiness and uncleanness contagions’ (1987, 142). In a slightly different way, I approach this problem as follows: insofar as death occurs in a controlled way in a holy domain (i.e., the sanctuary), it does not pose a problem. Outside the sanctuary, however, death becomes a threat to the sanctuary. Cf. Klawans 2006, 58.

³⁴⁷ Here, Paul adopts the term *δικαίωσις*.

resurrection of Christ is connected to the justification of believers in Paul's mind, it can at least be pointed out that the incorruptible, resurrected body of Christ seems to be more congruous with the requisite holiness of either "sacrifice" or the "mercy seat" (i.e., ἱλαστήριον in Rom 3:25), than his mortal, "cursed" body on the cross.³⁴⁸ At any rate, the fact remains that Paul thinks that the justification of believers has been accomplished through the death *and* the resurrection of Christ. This point further weakens the force of the argument that the αἷμα which accomplished justification is simply a synonym for θάνατος.

Moreover, we have evidence that some of the Church Fathers interpreted the word αἷμα in this passage as a sacrificial term, as the statement of Origen shows:

Therefore, the divine declaration says, "And he will place the incense upon the fire in the sight of the Lord, and the smoke of the incense will cover the mercy seat which is upon the [ark of the] covenant and he will not die. And he will take from the blood of the calf and will sprinkle it with his finger upon the mercy seat." Indeed, how the rite of atonement for men, which was done to God, should be celebrated was taught among the ancients. But you who came to Christ, the true high priest, who made atonement for you to God by his blood and reconciled you to the Father.³⁴⁹

Here, Origen alludes to Romans 3:25 and 5:9–10. He clearly compares Christ's blood to the life-blood of the sacrificial animals for the Yom Kippur rite. Origen thus undertands the "blood" in Paul's argument in a Jewish sacrificial context. Origen's case clearly shows that our understanding that the blood of Christ is a sacrificial offering is not unprecedented in the period

³⁴⁸ In this connection, Moffitt argues, in the epistle to the Hebrews, that the resurrected body of Christ itself, which conquers the mortality of the human fleshly body, functions as a pleasing sacrifice to God (2011, 230-56).

³⁴⁹ Origen, *Homilies on Leviticus* 1–16 9.10(1).

of the Church Fathers.³⁵⁰

Considering all these points together, it is problematic to equate αἷμα with θάνατος in Romans 5:9–10. In Jewish blood sacrifice, the death of a sacrificial animal is a constitutive part of the ritual, as the life-blood can be obtained through its death. Nonetheless, death itself cannot be equated with blood, since blood is life. What is dedicated to God is not death but life. In this light, Paul’s statement of Romans 5:9 can be construed in this way: Paul does not say that Jesus’ death *by itself* is the sacrifice for atonement. Rather, what accomplishes justification is αἷμα, which signifies the holy, incorruptible life of Jesus the Messiah. His life-blood is presented to God *through the death and the resurrection* (cf. Rom 4:25). Prior to examining Romans 3:25 in this light, however, it is important to examine how the term αἷμα is used in 4 Maccabees.

3. 3 Meaning of αἷμα in 4 Maccabees

The date of 4 Maccabees remains a matter of debate, and scholarly views ‘range anywhere from circa 30 BC–AD135’.³⁵¹ Whenever this text was written, however, due to its chronological proximity to the time of Paul, we must consider how the author considers αἷμα in relation to death.

In 4 Maccabees, “blood” and “death” initially seem to be used synonymously: καὶ διὰ τοῦ αἵματος τῶν εὐσεβῶν ἐκείνων καὶ τοῦ ἱλαστηρίου τοῦ θανάτου αὐτῶν ἡ θεία πρόνοια τὸν Ἰσραὴλ προκακωθέντα διέσωσεν (4Macc 17:22).³⁵² The author of 4 Maccabees appears to regard the

³⁵⁰ Cf. Moffitt 2013.

³⁵¹ Williams, Jarvis 2010, 29.

³⁵² There is, however, a textual variant in this passage, and Klauck argues that τοῦ ἱλαστηρίου θανάτου (the adjective usage of ἱλαστήριος) is a more plausible option than τοῦ ἱλαστηρίου τοῦ θανάτου (the substantive usage of ἱλαστήριον). See Klauck 1989, 753, n. 22.

deaths of the martyrs themselves as a propitiatory sacrifice to God.³⁵³ On the other hand, the same author also states: καθάρσιον αὐτῶν ποιῆσαι τὸ ἐμὸν αἷμα καὶ ἀντίψυχον αὐτῶν λαβέ τὴν ἐμὴν ψυχὴν (4Macc 6:29). Here, the author clearly states that what is dedicated to God is not the death of Eleazar, but his blood and life.³⁵⁴ As deSilva explains:

The movement of this passage clearly recalls some kind of ritual act whereby an alienated Deity is reconciled to the people. The spilling of blood and the offering of a sacrificial animal as an exchange-price for the lives of the worshipers, and as the means by which God's wrath can be averted and favor restored, is fundamental to Israelite sacrifice. ἀντίψυχον specifically recalls LXX Lev 17:11, in which God says that he gave the blood of animals to the Israelites "to perform the rite of atonement for your lives at the altar; for, as life, it is blood that atones for a life (ἀντὶ τῆς ψυχῆς)"...Overlaid upon this background is the pattern of Deuteronomy 28–30, which has already been at work in the apostasy and chastisement of the nation mentioned in 4:15–21. Eleazar offers his obedience to the law to the point of death as a manifestation of that return to obedience that would invite God's compassion upon the nation (Deut 30:1–3).³⁵⁵

In the light of the statement of 6:29, it is not likely that the author believed that death itself functioned as a holy sacrifice to God. Rather, he would have thought that the deaths of the martyrs were, as in the case Eleazar (cf. 4Macc 17:13), *part of the sacrificial process* through which their lives were offered to God, as it reads: "and the tyrant was punished, and the homeland purified, they having become, as it were, a life-in-exchange (ἀντίψυχον) for the sin of the nation" (4Macc 17:21).³⁵⁶ This is not to suggest that the soteriology of 4 Maccabees is

³⁵³ Sam Williams maintains that 4 Maccabees is based on the notion of "effective death". He argues, however, that this notion is not derived from the Jewish scriptures, but from the Hellenistic martyrdom ideology. Cf. Williams 1975, 183-97.

³⁵⁴ Jarvis Williams rightly detects the Jewish sacrificial idea in this statement, but he is wrong to describe "death" as an atoning sacrifice (2010, 46).

³⁵⁵ DeSilva 2006, 147.

³⁵⁶ Translated by deSilva.

solely based on the Jewish sacrificial ideas. The idea of the suffering of obedient Jews as the means of the termination of God's wrath is indeed present, and such an idea is alien to Levitical sacrificial system.³⁵⁷ Still, when the author exploits the imagery of sacrificial practices, he is basically in line with the Jewish thought that what is offered to God is not death but life.

3. 4 Yom Kippur imagery in Romans 3:25

If the argument above is maintained, it can help to explain how "blood" in Romans 5:9 is not a metonym for the death of Christ *per se*. Rather, the life-blood of Jesus is seen as a holy sacrifice to God. Given the thematic parallel between 5:9 and 3:25,³⁵⁸ αἷμα in 3:25 should be interpreted in the same light. When we construe the phrase ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι as "by the sacrifice of his life-blood", then, what would be the most plausible meaning of ἱλαστήριον?

It is important to stress that, in Jewish thought, a sacrifice is not something that God himself sets forth for his people. Instead, a sacrifice is what is brought near to the presence of God. In the case of the blood sacrifice for sins, blood must be *brought in an appropriate manner to the presence of God*, which accomplishes atonement. The sole eligible location for the dedication of a holy sacrifice is the sanctuary of God (cf. Deut 12:13–14). Within the Temple complex, moreover, the most solemn spot for the dedication of the blood sacrifice is the *mercy seat* (ἱλαστήριον) in the sanctum sanctorum, on which the blood is to be sprinkled only on the occasion of Yom Kippur. It must be stressed, again, *blood is the most important sacrifice* in the Yom Kippur rite, which is evinced by the fact that it is brought to the most holy place of the

³⁵⁷ We shall consider this point further in the next chapter.

³⁵⁸ As Käsemann states: 'Sinngemäß müßte ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι zu ἱλαστήριον gezogen werden, wie es 5,9 entspricht' (1973, 900).

sanctuary.

Given the importance of both *place* and *sacrifice*, it is indeed likely that Paul specifies both the sacrifice itself (αἷμα) and the place where the sacrifice is offered (ἱλαστήριον) in the Yom Kippur ritual. As Wilckens points out, ‘ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι wäre wiederum ohne den Bezug auf Lev 16 nicht verständlich; denn die hellenistischen Sühngaben haben mit Blut nichts zu tun’.³⁵⁹ Moreover, the idea that God himself proffers the mercy seat is not incongruous with a Jewish eschatological hope. It was common knowledge among first century Jews that the Ark of the Covenant had long since disappeared, most probably immediately before the destruction of the First Temple.³⁶⁰ Thus, Jews in the Second Temple period could not adhere closely to the procedure of the Yom Kippur rite due to the lack of one of the essential components, the mercy seat on the top of the Ark of the Covenant. Although Jews in the Second Temple era had no way of knowing where it was hidden, some of them believed that the Ark would be revealed at the eschatological moment that would coincide with the restoration of Israel, as 2 Maccabees 2:5–8 reads:

Jeremiah came and found a cave-dwelling, and he brought there the tent and the ark and the altar of incense; then he sealed up the entrance. Some of those who followed him came up intending to mark the way, but could not find it. When Jeremiah learned of it, he rebuked them and declared: ‘The place shall be unknown until God gathers his people together again and shows his mercy. Then the Lord will disclose these things, and the glory of the Lord and the cloud appear, as they were shown in the case of Moses,

³⁵⁹ Wilckens 1978, 192. In this connection, Gese explains the significance of “blood” in Jewish cultus: ‘Blood ceremonies are known from the field of history of religion. The drinking of blood, or smearing the body with blood is done in order to gain strength, to take into oneself particular powers. But there is a fundamental distinction between this type of blood practice and the use of blood in Israel, where blood is treated with the greatest respect’ (1981, 107).

³⁶⁰ Cf. Jer 3:16; *War.* 1.152; 5.219. On this topic, see especially Nir 2003, 43–77.

and as Solomon asked that the place should be specially consecrated'.³⁶¹

As Schoeps suggests,³⁶² Paul may well utilise the hope of the manifestation of the lost Ark of the Covenant by God himself. Moreover, as discussed above, there is evidence that the “seventy-weeks” prophecy in Daniel 9 was read in the eschatological hope of the eschatological Yom Kippur in the late Second Temple period.³⁶³ Strikingly, the themes of “atonement” and “justification” are juxtaposed in this oracle:

Daniel 9:24 (in OG): ...συντελεσθῆναι τὴν ἁμαρτίαν καὶ τὰς ἀδικίας σπανίσαι καὶ ἀπαλεῖψαι τὰς ἀδικίας καὶ δικαιοσύνῃν τὸ ὄραμα καὶ δοθῆναι δικαιοσύνην αἰώνιον...

Daniel 9:24 (Theodotion): ...τοῦ συντελεσθῆναι ἁμαρτίαν καὶ τοῦ σφραγίσαι ἁμαρτίας καὶ τοῦ ἐξιλάσασθαι ἀδικίας καὶ τοῦ ἀγαγεῖν δικαιοσύνην αἰώνιον...

Although there is no explicit evidence that this Danielic oracle is the crucial background of Paul's statement (cf. 1Thess 5:1; Dan 2:21; 2Thess 2:4; Dan 7:25; 10:36–39),³⁶⁴ provided the popularity of this oracle among first century Jews,³⁶⁵ it is not unlikely that Paul has this Danielic oracle in mind.

³⁶¹ 2 Baruch 6:8 also states: “And he [the angel] said to the earth with a loud voice: Earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the mighty God, and receive the things [which includes the mercy seat] which I commit to you, and guard them *until the last times*, so that you may restore them when you are ordered, so that strangers may not get possession of them”. Translated by F. J. Klijn. See also 2Bar. 80:2; 4Bar. 3:6–14.

³⁶² Schoeps argues, ‘We may suppose that the atoning sacrifice of the second temple still in operation at the time of Paul—it was, of course, still celebrated in spite of the missing ark of the covenant and the *kapporeth*—stood at the very heart of Pauline thought as the soteriological problem: how can another procure atonement for my sins?’ (1961, 131).

³⁶³ See chapter 2,4.2.

³⁶⁴ Beckwith states, ‘In First Thessalonians 5:1–8, Paul takes up Jesus’s teaching about his second coming. He says that his theme is “the times and the seasons” (verse 1), a phrase from Daniel 2:21, and then proceeds directly to echo the teaching in Jesus’ eschatological discourse’ (2005, 137). See also an important argument for the Pauline authorship of 2 Thessalonians by Ben Witherington (2006, 12–3), though it is outside the scope of this research to discuss this issue.

³⁶⁵ Beckwith, *ibid.*, 142–3; N. T. Wright argues that this is the oracle to which Josephus cryptically alludes (*J.W.* 6.312–15; cf. *Ant.* 10.276; *J. W.* 4.388; 6.109), which instigated Jews to fight against the Roman Empire (1992, 312–3). See also Grabbe 1997, 604–9.

In the light of the enormous significance of the Yom Kippur imagery for both the national life of Jews in general and Jewish apocalyptic imaginations in particular, Paul most probably evokes the image of Yom Kippur blood sacrifice by referring to the combination of the place of atonement (ἱλαστήριον) with the sacrifice itself (αὐτοῦ αἵματι). The idea that Jesus is portrayed as both the most holy place in the sanctuary as well as the most holy sacrifice would not have been contradictory in Paul's mind, since he can depict Christian believers as both God's sanctuary as well as a holy sacrifice (cf. Rom 12:1; 1Cor 6:19).

4. Conclusion

We have conducted the survey of how Paul uses the Passover and Yom Kippur motifs in 1 Corinthians and Romans, respectively. What we find is that the sacrificial terms Paul uses are intimately and organically integrated in his arguments in both epistles.

In the case of 1 Corinthians, the word *πάσχα* functions as a *signpost* that indicates where his discourse is heading. For instance, the feast of Unleavened Bread was observed immediately after sacrificing paschal lambs. Hence, Paul's mention of *πάσχα* anticipates his exhortation from verse 5:8 onwards. Furthermore, this word ushers the Corinthian believers into a symbolic Exodus world, where they are wandering in the symbolic space of wilderness en route to a promised heritage.

As regards Romans, the sacrificial terms in verse 3:25 are closely related to the argument Paul is mounting up to this point, not least to the leitmotif of *ὀργή θεοῦ*. Paul's discourse is firmly rooted in the Jewish sacrificial idea that the sacrificial blood redeems sinners from the wrath of God. Paul does not simply borrow the word *αἷμα* from pre-Pauline traditions without

noticing the centrality of blood in Jewish sacrificial practices. On the contrary, precisely because he recognises the significance of blood in the sin offering in general and in the Yom Kippur blood sacrifice in particular, he stresses that it is the life-blood of Christ Jesus that has established the justification of believers and will redeem them from the eschatological wrath of God (Rom 3:25, 5:9–10).

Paul deploys both Passover and Yom Kippur motifs in crucial points in his discourses, either in an introductory point (1 Corinthians 5:7) or in a climactic part (Romans 3:25), whereby he creates a dramatic effect that bolsters his overall arguments. This evidence suggests that Paul has used these images in ways that align well with the Jewish “covenantal” background and context. The Passover feast is the celebration of God’s faithfulness to the covenant, and Yom Kippur is the day when the covenant relationship between God and his people is firmly cemented. Paul has a good knowledge of what Jewish festivals and Jewish sacrificial practices signify respectively, and that he does not confuse them. In other words, Paul does not force randomly assembled Jewish motifs into his preconceived Christological understanding, thus potentially distorting their original meanings.³⁶⁶ Rather, these Jewish feasts and sacrificial practices seem to help Paul to explore the multifaceted significance of the Christ event.

³⁶⁶ Campbell claims that ‘salvation-historical approaches *still* place their crucial determinative emphasis on the analysis of Paul’s Jewish background, rather than on the analysis of what Paul’s Christian experience is...Christ is interpreted in broader canonical categories, but is still interpreted rather than interpreting’ (2005, 36-8) [Campbell’s italics]. However, it is not necessary to be one-way (i.e., Christ interpreting the Old Testament), as Bauckham states, ‘Precisely at the points where they appreciate most fully the new identity of God in Jesus, they are engaged in exegesis, *in the process of bringing the texts of the Hebrew Scriptures and the history of Jesus into mutually interpretative interplay*’ (2008, 53) [my emphasis].

Chapter 4: The Isaianic Suffering Servant

1. Introduction

1. 1 Purpose of this chapter

In the previous chapters we studied first century Jewish perceptions of Passover and Yom Kippur, and then applied the insights from these studies to the Pauline texts that contain the sacrificial terms, *πάσχα*, *αἷμα*, and *ἱλαστήριον*. In this chapter, we proceed to the study of the third Jewish theme that stands behind Paul's soteriology, namely, the Isaianic suffering servant. This study will be a necessary preparation for the next chapter in which we shall examine the Isaianic influence on one specific Pauline text, namely, Galatians 3:13.

1. 2 Significance of Isaiah 53 in Paul's soteriology

1. 2. 1 Martin Hengel's arguments

As regards Paul's perception of the suffering servant in Isaiah 53 (more precisely, Isaiah 52:13–53:12, which is normally called the “fourth servant poem”),³⁶⁷ Martin Hengel's arguments that Paul alludes to the fourth servant poem in Romans 4:25, and that Paul received the early Christian tradition in which Jesus' death was understood in the light of the fourth

³⁶⁷ There is no evidence that ancient readers had an idea of the “servant poems” as distinct units within the text of Isaiah. Cf. Jeremias, “*παῖς θεοῦ*,” *TDNT* 5:682; Hays 1998, 209. Bearing this point in mind, however, we shall use the term “servant poems” henceforth for convenience sake. Concerning the scope of the servant poems, we shall use the broadest definition, as referring to Isa 42:1–9; 49:1–13; 50:4–11; 52:13–53:12.

servant poem (cf. 1Cor 15:3),³⁶⁸ would seem to remain irrefutable. Indeed, the majority of Pauline scholars now agree that Paul accepts the early Christian conviction that Jesus is the suffering servant of Isaiah 53.³⁶⁹

Hengel maintains that ‘it should no longer be doubted *that Isa. 53 had an influence on the origin and shaping of the earliest kerygma*’.³⁷⁰ Hengel further claims that this Isaianic kerygma particularly affects and shapes Paul’s understanding of Jesus’ death, and contends that Romans 4:25 most probably depends on Isaiah 53:12:

Romans 4:25a: παρεδόθη διὰ τὰ παραπτώματα ἡμῶν...

Isaiah 53:12: ...διὰ τὰς ἁμαρτίας αὐτῶν παρεδόθη.

Hengel notes that, in most of the undisputed and disputed Pauline texts, the preposition ὑπέρ is used in the “for us” formula (cf. Gal 1:4; 2:20; Eph 5:25; 1Tim 2:6; Titus 2:14),³⁷¹ and that Romans 4:25 is the exceptional case that employs the preposition διὰ, which coincides with the case of Isaiah 53:12 in Old Greek texts (OG).³⁷² Another piece of evidence indicating Paul’s dependence on Isaiah 53:12 is his choice of the verb παραδίδωμι. It is noticeable that both Paul and the four Gospel writers use this verb as the technical term for Jesus’ being handed over (cf. Rom 8:32; 1Cor 11:23; Gal 2:20; e.g. Matt 20:18; Mark 9:31; Luke 9:44; John 19:16), which implies that their choice of this verb is based on the same source, namely, Isaiah 53:12 in OG.

³⁶⁸ Hengel 1981, 34-9, 59-60.

³⁶⁹ Morna Hooker, who once questioned whether Paul identified Jesus with the suffering servant, now states, ‘To the question that has been put to me, “Did the use of Isaiah 53 to interpret his mission begin with Jesus?” I remain convinced that the answer is “No.” To the question “Where, then, *did* it begin?” I am far more ready than I was forty years ago to suggest that it may well have been with Paul’ (1998, 103) [Hooker’s emphasis].

³⁷⁰ Ibid., 59 [Hengel’s emphasis].

³⁷¹ In the case of Galatians 1:4, there is a textual variant that attests the use of περί.

³⁷² Ibid., 35-6. See also Shum 2002, 189; Hooker 1998, 101-3. Henceforth, we adopt the term “OG” (Old Greek) rather than “LXX”. We shall return to this point soon in this chapter.

In addition to this, Paul *quotes*, nearly verbatim, from the fourth servant poem, and identifies Jesus with the servant of the Lord (Rom 15:21; cf. Isa 52:15 in OG).³⁷³

Hengel further argues that behind the tradition preserved in 1 Corinthians 15:3b, which Paul admits that he also received, there stands the earliest church's identification of Jesus with the suffering servant in Isaiah 53. Hengel points out the fact that Isaiah 53 is the only text among the Jewish scriptures that expresses the idea of "vicarious death" that atones for the sins of the whole people: 'As a rule, the possibility of such representation [i.e., a representative death for the guilt of others] is rejected out of hand, since "a person may die only for his own sins" [Deut 24:16]. Moses' request to God to forgive the sins of his people or to be able to die for them is expressly rejected by God himself: "I blot out from my book only those who have sinned against me"'.³⁷⁴ From this theological point of view, it seems reasonable to conclude that the pre-Pauline tradition in 1 Corinthians 15:3b identifies Jesus with the suffering servant in Isaiah 53. This point strongly suggests that even before Paul wrote his epistles, the identification of Jesus with the Isaianic servant had already been accepted among many early Christians. Hengel thus stresses the enormous importance of Isaiah 53 on the New Testament as a whole: 'at any rate, there are ten literal quotations [in the NT] from the fifteen verses of Isa.

³⁷³ Dunn's assertion that Paul identifies the "him" in the quoted text of Isaiah with himself is gratuitous (1988, 865-6). Nowhere does Paul claim that he only goes to places where people have never heard of him (i.e., Paul). On the contrary, Paul was willing to proclaim the gospel where people already knew him (cf. Gal 1:21-24). Wagner and Schreiner rightly argue this point. Cf. Wagner 1998, 195-202; 2002, 329-36; Schreiner 1998, 770-1. See also Rom 10:16; Isa 53:1.

³⁷⁴ Ibid., 8. As Hengel acknowledges, 2 Maccabees 7:37-38 exhibits a similar idea (Ibid., 60). However, it is uncertain whether Paul or other early Christians could have resorted to the authority of this book with the formulaic expression *κατὰ τὰς γραφάς*. F. F. Bruce claims: 'While the New Testament writers all used the Septuagint, to a greater or lesser degree, none of them tell us precisely what the limits of its contents were. The "scriptures" to which they appealed covered substantially the same range as the Hebrew Bible' (1988, 50). It is also important to note that the seven brothers in 2 Maccabees 7 do not regard their deaths as being entirely "vicarious", since they, unlike the suffering servant in Isaiah 53, acknowledge that they suffer owing to their own sins (cp. 2Macc 7:32 with Isa 53:9).

52.13–53.12, and thirty-two allusions to it. As far as I can see, this is one of the best results for any Old Testament text to be found in the New Testament'.³⁷⁵ Hence, when early Christians resorted to the authority of the “scriptures” in defence of the *vicarious* death of Jesus, the only appropriate text must have been Isaiah 53.

This is not to suggest that the earliest Christians understood the meaning of Jesus’ death only through the lens of Isaiah 53. On the contrary, there is overwhelming evidence that they reflected on his death through other passages, in particular through the Psalms (e.g., Mark 15:34; Ps 22:1; John 19:24; Ps 22:18). Moreover, they would have struggled to grasp the meaning of his death in relation to the overarching narrative of the Jewish scriptures (cf. Luke 24:25–32, 44–46; Acts 17:2–3, 11). Nevertheless, it must be stressed that even supposing that early Christians understood Psalm 22 as referring to the “vicarious” death of Jesus (cf. Matt 27:35, 39, 43, 46), they could have done this only because they read this text in the light of Isaiah 53 (cf. Matt 26:28), but not vice versa. Psalm 22 does not talk about the “vicarious” suffering on behalf of the people, but Isaiah 53 does. In sum, in the light of the exceptional theological view expressed in Isaiah 53, Hengel’s view that Isaiah 53 is one of the central backdrops of Paul’s soteriology is compelling.

1. 2. 2 Isaiah 53 within its literary context

Solid evidence suggests that Isaiah 49–55 as a whole, not simply Isaiah 53, is significantly important for Paul. Richard Hays points out, ‘Allusions are more difficult to quantify precisely, but the list in Nestle-Aland²⁷ can serve as a rough indicator: out of fifty allusions to Isaiah in the

³⁷⁵ Ibid., 60.

seven-letter corpus, twenty-one of them point to Isaiah 49–55'.³⁷⁶ To count Paul's special interest in and familiarity with Isaiah 49–55, and given that Paul identifies Jesus with the servant of Isaiah 53, there are good grounds for assuming that Paul understands the significance of Isaiah 53 within its broader context.

Indeed, intertextual study between the book of Isaiah and the Pauline corpus is becoming a flourishing area of research in Pauline scholarship, and some important studies have been published in recent years.³⁷⁷ These studies convincingly demonstrate that Paul quotes a passage from the book of Isaiah in view of the broader context surrounding this passage. Concerning Paul's understanding of Isaiah 52:12–53:12, Shum comments thus:

In view of the explicit citations from Isa. 53:1 and 52:15 respectively in Rom. 10:16 and 15:21, there is no doubt that Paul had good knowledge of the Suffering Servant Song when composing *Romans*. Also, the explicit uses of Isa. 52:5 and 52:7 respectively in Rom. 2:24 and 10:15 indicate Paul's knowledge of the larger context of the Song, which *at least indirectly* suggests that Paul may well have been familiar with the Song too.³⁷⁸

Moreover, some scholars convincingly show that Paul applies the second servant poem (Isaiah 49:1–13) to himself.³⁷⁹ In the light of the strong thematic unity between the second and the

³⁷⁶ Hays 1998, 205. Hickling also indicates, 'Paul, however, seems to have had a particular predilection for Isaiah: in his case, some 26% of the Old Testament quotations are from that book – or rather, they are taken from a very small number of chapters in it...First, a number of passages in Isa. 40–55 seems to have attracted his attention...Within this section of the book, the part of the text most used is 49–51...A second group of quotations within Isa. 40–55 follows almost immediately on the first, and falls within chapters 52–55' (1978, 215–6).

³⁷⁷ The Isaianic influence on the Pauline corpus as a whole, as conducted by Wilk (1998), is outside the scope of our research. Concerning the epistle to the Romans, see Wagner 2002 and Shum 2002. As regards Galatians, see Harmon 2010.

³⁷⁸ Shum 2002, 196–7 [Shum's emphasis]. See also Haacker 2003, 100–1.

³⁷⁹ See Beale 1989, 562; Webb 1993, 128–133; and esp., Lim 2009, 133–4. Paul has a particular interest in the second servant poem. Lim enumerates a number of quotations of and allusions to Isaiah's second

fourth servant poems (e.g., Isa 49:3; 52:13; 53:1), this point strongly suggests the possibility that Paul finds some continuity between Jesus' mission and his own vocation on the basis of a holistic reading of Isaiah 49–55.³⁸⁰ Hence, the assumption that Paul takes a keen interest not simply in Isaiah 53, but also in Isaiah 49–55 as a whole, will be the basis of our research in this chapter.

1.3 Textual issues

Concerning the textual problems involved in this study, we must be mindful of some complicated issues. It is no exaggeration to say that the Greek version of Isaiah itself forms a major area of research in biblical scholarship.³⁸¹ The problem lies in the fact that, while there are not a few variants within Old Greek manuscripts,³⁸² considerable differences are observable between Greek versions of Isaiah and Masoretic text (MT).³⁸³ Concerning the latter, scholarly

servant poem in 2 Corinthians and in other undisputed Pauline epistles (2Cor 3:6,14,18; 4:4,6; 5:18–19; 6:1,2,4–10; Rom 11:13,25; 15:16; 1Cor 9:15; 15:10,58; Gal 1:15,16; 2:2,8–9; 4:11; Phil 2:16; 1Thess 2:1; 3:5). Ibid., 131–2. For a more comprehensive list, see K. O. Sanders 1991, 62, n. 51. Gignilliat, however, opposes the view that Paul applies the second servant poem to himself: 'the typological significance of the Servant is a weight too great to be placed on the shoulders of Paul. Someone greater than Paul is needed to carry the significance and it has been argued that this person is Jesus Christ' (2007, 108–9). Against Gignilliat's view, Lambrecht argues that we should not underestimate Paul's emphatic usage of *νῦν* in this verse. As the time when the Corinthians received (*δέξασθαι*) was in the past, so the time when Jesus laboured as the servant was in the past. And *now* is the time when Paul is co-working (cf. *συνεργοῦντες*) with God, which is highlighted by the contrast of Paul's verbatim quotation from OG Isaiah 49:8 with his subsequent modification of this verse with the double *νῦν*. See Lambrecht 1989, 384.

³⁸⁰ This point is well explained by Harmon (2010, 117–219). E. P. Sanders helpfully comments, 'It is the long-held Jewish expectation that, in the final days, Gentiles would come to worship the God of Israel... This is the second half of a standard Jewish expectation about the end: God would first restore Israel, and then Gentiles would come in... Paul saw himself as the agent of this, the second half of the divine plan. His job description was this: Apostle to the Gentiles in the Messianic Era' (1991, 3–4).

³⁸¹ Cf. Wagner 2013, 29, n.146.

³⁸² As to this term, McLay explains, '[T]he text that is being used may represent a LXX reading, that is, it is part of the scriptural tradition that originated in the Greek Jewish community, but it does not necessarily represent the original reading for that book that can be critically reconstructed using textual criticism. For this reason, most specialists now reserve the term Old Greek (OG) to designate a text that in the judgement of the scholar represents the original translation of a book' (2003, 6).

³⁸³ Concerning the Qumran texts, Sapp comments, 'The Qumran textual variants in Isaiah 53 compared to the MT are minor' (1998, 172). In this connection, the Aramaic text of Isaiah exhibits far more

opinion divides as to whether these differences should be attributed to the translator's free renderings, or to the existence of unknown Hebrew texts that the translator might have rendered faithfully.³⁸⁴ Troxel points out another factor: 'some renderings in LXX-Isaiah seem best explained as reflecting a Hebrew variant, while others are amenable to observation of the translator's perplexity or his overall conception of the meaning of the verse or passage'.³⁸⁵

Besides these points, we face a challenge of a different kind. While it is extremely difficult to ascertain which version of text(s) Paul normally uses in his personal reflection on the book of Isaiah and in writing his epistles, it is equally difficult to know in what manner Paul quotes from or alludes to the texts of Isaiah. One of the most fundamental questions is, as McLay puts it: 'Did they [the NT writers] quote from memory or copy from a manuscript?'.³⁸⁶ On this point, Wagner maintains, '*Ancient interpreters relied heavily on memory even in conjunction with the use of written texts*. Paul in particular was raised in a culture that deeply valued an intimate acquaintance with Israel's scriptures. In such an environment, the memorization of larger portions of scripture was probably the norm'.³⁸⁷ We can no longer take it for granted that Paul always uses the 'septuagintal' text of Isaiah.³⁸⁸ He might have utilised the Hebrew Isaianic texts

profound divergences from the Hebrew texts. Rowley explains, 'the Targum equates the Servant in the latter passage [i.e., Isaiah 53] with the Messiah. It does not, however, present a suffering Messiah. It clearly has in mind the Davidic Messiah, and not the Messiah ben Ephraim, but the sufferings which are mentioned in this chapter are systematically transferred to Israel's foes, or to the disloyal Israelites' (1965, 68). The Aramaic version of the text, however, is not of great significance to our study, since it is generally considered that this text had been formulated 'during the Tannaitic and Amoraic periods'. See Chilton's comment in page xxiv in his introduction to *The Isaiah Targum*. (Nevertheless, we cannot exclude the possibility that some distinctive theological ideas found in the Isaiah Targum originated in the late Second Temple era. Cf. Aytoun 1922, 176; Chilton 1982, 91-4).

³⁸⁴ Cf. Ulrich 2002, 194, n.20; Troxel 2008, 73-85.

³⁸⁵ Troxel 2008, 80.

³⁸⁶ McLay 2003, 15.

³⁸⁷ Wagner 2002, 21 [Wagner's emphasis].

³⁸⁸ Lim challenges Stanley's view: 'All modern investigators are agreed in viewing the Greek Septuagint as the primary Vorlage for Paul's citations from the Jewish Scriptures' (Stanley 1992, 67). Lim shows that, in some instances, Paul's scriptural citations seem to reflect the texts of the DSS rather than those of

in his memory, and translated them into Greek when necessary. Although space does not permit us fully to engage in these problems, we must pay close attention to variants within Greek texts of Isaiah, as well as to the difference between Greek and Hebrew texts.

2. Meaning of the “suffering” of the servant

2. 1 Introduction

In order to explore the significance of Isaiah 53 for Paul’s soteriology, it is useful, as a preliminary step, to consider what sort of soteriological conception would have emerged from the text of Isaiah 53 in the eyes of first century readers. In this regard, a number of scholars argue that Deutero-Isaiah adopts some sacrificial images to illuminate the suffering of the servant. For instance, Blenkinsopp suggests that Isaiah 53 alludes to ‘plural cultic images, such as a guilt (or sin) offering, a sacrificial animal, and a scapegoat’.³⁸⁹ Allen further maintains that the sacrificial ideas are the crucial theological backdrop to the suffering of the servant:

The Servant’s voluntary sacrifice of himself in behalf of the people by taking their sins and receiving their punishment is clear. The upshot of Isaiah 53 is threefold: 1) Isaiah clearly states that God ordained the Servant’s suffering, 2) the Servant is not suffering for his own sins, and 3) the Servant substitutes himself for the people and suffers for them. There should be no doubt that substitutionary atonement is taught in Isaiah 53.³⁹⁰

MT or OG. See Lim1997, 140-60. Hengel also comments, ‘Paul sometimes used a Greek text revised according to the Hebrew, as in his citation in Isaiah 52:7 in Romans 10:15, though in his immediately following citation in Romans 10:16 of Isaiah 53:1 he once again follows the Septuagint version’ (2004, 81).

³⁸⁹ Blenkinsopp 2002, 351. Cf. Watts 1987, 231; Oswalt 1998, 377; Goldingay 2001, 306-9.

³⁹⁰ Allen 2012, 184.

In this section, however, we question this conventional understanding. In the first place, it must be stressed that the maltreatment of the servant is incongruous with the Jewish notion of sacrifice. By definition, a “sacrifice” must be spotless and without blemish (cf. Lev 22:17–20; Mal 1:6–2:3). A sacrifice cannot be an object of punishment or torture, since this would jeopardise its spotlessness. In this light, the ill treatment of the servant, who is described as being “stricken”, “struck down”, “afflicted”, and “oppressed”, disqualifies the servant from being a spotless sacrifice to God. Hence, it is far from evident whether first century Jews who were familiar with the Temple cultus would have automatically associated the suffering of the Isaianic servant with the practices of sacrificial offerings.

Such extreme abuse of the servant is inconsistent with the role of the scapegoat in the Yom Kippur ritual, at least in the light of the description of Leviticus 16.³⁹¹ The task of the scapegoat was not to be tortured as an object of punishment as the means of atonement, but simply to be a vehicle that carries away all the iniquities of Israel into the wilderness. Thus, it is not necessary that the scapegoat be afflicted, let alone be killed, as Milgrom explains: ‘According to the rabbis, the goat was pushed off a cliff (*m. Yoma* 6:6...). Philo, however, presumes that the goat was allowed to live (*Plant.* 61). Killing the goat was not essential, for the high priest would resume the service as soon as he was notified that the goat had reached the wilderness (*m. Yoma* 6.8...).’³⁹² Whybray also points out, ‘The ritual of the sending away of the goat may thus be seen as a symbolic action, or dramatization, of this definitive removal of sin, in this case from the whole people. There is no “suffering” or “punishment” imposed upon the goat that could in

³⁹¹ There is a possibility that the scapegoat was maltreated in the late Second Temple period. We shall return to this point in due course.

³⁹² Milgrom 1991, 1045. McLean explains, ‘it must be noted that the Levitical scapegoat was *not* a victim of mob feeling, but was carefully and dispassionately selected by casting lots. The ritual was deliberate, disciplined and limited in scope, not a spontaneous, uncontrolled act of mass aggression’ (1996, 67).

any way be said to be vicarious'.³⁹³ In what follows, then, we shall examine the validity of the popular view that the “suffering” in Isaiah 53 should be considered from the sacrificial perspective.

2. 2 Isaiah 53 and the blood sacrifice

As mentioned above, the image of the “suffering” servant contrasts with common Jewish notions of sacrifice. Moreover, in the light of the crucial role of “blood” in the Jewish sacrificial offering, the absence of this term in Isaiah 53 makes it more difficult to assume that the servant is likened to an animal for blood sacrifice. Many scholars take the appearance of the word אִשָּׁם in 53:10 as concrete evidence that Deutero-Isaiah had a blood-sacrificial image in mind, since this word normally signifies “guilt offering” in Leviticus 5.³⁹⁴ Oswalt thus maintains, ‘It is when the “life” of the Servant is offered as a sin offering that God’s purpose in bringing him to this place is realized (“prosper”)’.³⁹⁵ While the exact difference between חַטָּאת (“sin offering”) and אִשָּׁם is a matter of scholarly debate, it is true that both designations generally refer to a sacrificial offering.³⁹⁶

Nonetheless, the highly ambiguous syntax of this sentence does not allow us to conclude that this must express the idea of sacrificial offering.³⁹⁷ As Whybray explains, ‘The verb שׁוּם/

³⁹³ Whybray 1978, 49.

³⁹⁴ E.g., Childs 2001, 417; Allen 2012, 178-80.

³⁹⁵ Oswalt 2003, 586.

³⁹⁶ Gerstenberger comments, ‘the substance of these two designations, however, can hardly be distinguished. Both are concerned with liberating from the contamination of sin generated by the perpetrator’s misbehavior. Accordingly, the cases in Lev. 5:21–24 (6:2–5E), which actually fall completely outside the definition of “inadvertent” transgressions, are also included in the catalog of sin offerings’ (1996, 65).

³⁹⁷ Joachimsen states the line in question (אִם-תְּשִׂים אִשָּׁם נַפְשׁוֹ) is ‘corrupt, disputed and untranslatable’ (2011, 386-90).

שׂ never occurs elsewhere in the Old Testament with the name of a sacrifice (whether שׂ or not) as its object. The phrase is unique. It cannot be said to be in any way an example of priestly or sacrificial terminology; and to take it for granted that it means “offer a guilt-offering” is to make an unwarrantable assumption’.³⁹⁸ He goes on to argue, ‘It is sufficient to conclude, especially in view of the remarkable possibilities of metathesis, haplography and dittography which this sequence of letters must have presented to a succession of scribes, that the text is so uncertain that 53:10 cannot properly be used to support any theory of the vicarious suffering of the Servant’.³⁹⁹ While a number of scholars still maintain that the text in question clearly denotes a sacrificial offering,⁴⁰⁰ an irrefutable argument is lacking.

In OG, on the other hand, an allusion to a sacrificial offering seems to be explicit: ἐὰν δώτε περὶ ἁμαρτίας (Isa 53:10b).⁴⁰¹ Since the phrase περὶ ἁμαρτίας is the technical term that stands for “sin offering”, first century readers might have recognised a sacrificial image in this verse.⁴⁰² Yet, things are not quite so simple.

It is important to note that the form of the verb δίδωμι is the second person plural, which suggests that the agent who offers this sin offering is neither the Lord nor the servant.⁴⁰³ Indeed, there is a marked difference between MT and OG concerning this verse, as Ekblad explains: ‘The LXX of Isaiah 53:10 is completely different from the MT. The MT begins with a

³⁹⁸ Whybray 1989, 64. Koole, however, contends, ‘In my view, the v. refrains from using a common sacrificial term because there is now no question of a material compensation but of someone who offers himself’ (1998, 321).

³⁹⁹ Whybray, *ibid.*, 66.

⁴⁰⁰ Cf. Joachimsen 2011, 386-9.

⁴⁰¹ Concerning this phrase, there are no textual variants in ancient manuscripts. In later manuscripts, there are some manuscripts that replace ἁμαρτίας by πλημμελείας, which signifies “guilt offering”. The evidence is, however, late. Cf. Harmon 2010, 62, n. 61, 62.

⁴⁰² As we studied in chapter 2, the phrase περὶ ἁμαρτίας can signify both the blood sacrifice and the scapegoat in the Yom Kippur rite (Lev 16:5).

⁴⁰³ Cf. Hengel 2004, 125-6.

statement concerning the Lord's delight in crushing the servant and making him sick if his life would make a guilt offering...In contrast, in the LXX a statement about the Lord's desire to purify the servant is followed by an invitation for the addressees to give a sin offering resulting in their seeing a long-lived posterity'.⁴⁰⁴ Hence, neither MT nor OG of 53:10 should be regarded as the decisive evidence that the servant is likened to a blood sacrifice.

A sacrificial image can be detected in 53:7b ("like a lamb that is led to the slaughter").⁴⁰⁵ Admittedly, the immediate context of this phrase seems to be agricultural rather than sacrificial, as the following phrase suggests ("like a sheep that before its shearers"). Yet, first century readers might have seen the paschal lamb image in this phrase.⁴⁰⁶ A potential allusion to a paschal lamb would be more explicit in OG than in MT. In MT, the servant is depicted as כֶּשֶׁל (masculine) as well as כְּרֹחֶל (feminine),⁴⁰⁷ whereas he is described as ὡς πρόβατον (neuter) as well as ὡς ἀμνός (masculine) in OG. It is not clear why OG translator(s) adopted ἀμνός rather than its feminine form ἀμνάς, but he may possibly have the paschal lamb in mind (cf. Exod 12:5).⁴⁰⁸ Interestingly, the combination of these two Greek words appears in Leviticus 14:10, which is the instruction for the purification ritual for lepers: καὶ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ ὀγδόῃ λήμψεται δύο ἀμνοὺς ἐνιαυσίους ἀμώμους καὶ πρόβατον ἐνιαύσιον ἄμωμον καὶ τρία δέκατα σεμιδάλεως εἰς θυσίαν.⁴⁰⁹ Hence, first century readers of OG Isaiah might have been reminded of a sacrificial

⁴⁰⁴ Ekblad 1999, 240.

⁴⁰⁵ Cf. Blenkinsopp 2002, 351.

⁴⁰⁶ Bauckham suggests that John the seer would have read this Isaianic text in this way (1993, 71).

⁴⁰⁷ An ewe-lamb is used for the sin offering (e.g., Lev 5:6), whereas a male lamb is not used for the sin offering.

⁴⁰⁸ According to the instruction of Exodus 12:5, the paschal lamb must be a year-old male. Cf. Ekblad 1999, 229.

⁴⁰⁹ Jerome seems to associate the suffering servant with a leper, as Schipper comments: 'For example, in 53:4 Jerome uses the Latin word *leprosum* for the Hebrew term that we translated as "plagued"' (2011, 71).

victim of some kind when reading 53:7b.⁴¹⁰

2.3 Isaiah 53 and the scapegoat

Some scholars maintain that the scapegoat image can be observed in the description of the suffering servant. The significance of the phrase **נִשָּׂא חַטָּא** in 53:12 becomes intelligible in the light of the scapegoat, as Whybray comments, ‘This is the only passage [Lev 16:22] in the Old Testament in which the phrase **נִשָּׂא עוֹן** is used with an animal as the subject of the verb. [I]t is nowhere stated that an animal slaughtered in sacrifice “bears the guilt” of the person(s) for whom that the sacrifice is offered’.⁴¹¹ The similarity between these two phrases might therefore suggest a connection.

Another allusion to the scapegoat can be found in OG Isaiah. As regards Isaiah 53:4, while the servant is described as bearing “sickness” (**חֲלִי**) in MT, he is said to “bear our sins” in OG: *οὗτος τὰς ἀμαρτίας ἡμῶν φέρει*.⁴¹² Ekblad comments: ‘The LXX’s matching of different Hebrew words with *ἀμαρτίας* in Isaiah 53:4ff specifies the LXX’s particular understanding of how the Lord responds to sin through the servant’.⁴¹³ While these linguistic connections remain indecisive, there seems to be a conceptual similarity between the suffering servant and the scapegoat as to their roles. Admittedly, there is no evidence in Rabbinic literature that the suffering servant was likened to the scapegoat. However, at the end of the first century, the

⁴¹⁰ Incidentally, a number of the Church Fathers clearly associated this passage with the death of Christ. For instance, in the fourth century CE, Ambrose writes, ‘How can he obtain freedom if he denies the Blood by which he was redeemed? For, it is the price of our freedom, as Peter says: “You were redeemed with the precious blood,”...as He himself said: “I was led like a lamb to be sacrificed,”’. Ambrose, *Letters to laymen* 69.

⁴¹¹ Whybray 1978, 48. See also Adela Yabro Collins 1998, 177; Blenkinsopp 2002, 351.

⁴¹² See also Isa 53:11, 12 in OG.

⁴¹³ Ekblad 1999, 213. See also Hengel 2004, 124.

author of the *Epistle of Barnabas* identifies Jesus with both the Isaianic servant and the scapegoat (cf. *Barn.* 5.2,14; 7.6–11; 14.7–9). To be sure, this does not necessarily mean that the author of *Barnabas* detected the scapegoat image in the description of the Isaianic suffering servant. He might have simply depended on the two different strands of early Christian interpretations of the death of Christ. Yet, according to *Barnabas*, the scapegoat is described as the object of abuse, as all the people spit upon it and pierce it (cf. *Barn.* 7.8). This description is reminiscent of the maltreatment of the suffering servant. Stökl Ben Ezra argues that there are reasonable grounds for assuming that *Barnabas* reflects the historical scapegoat ritual.⁴¹⁴ He argues that *Barnabas*' description of the scapegoat ritual exhibits some commonality with another ancient source, the Mishnah. According to both texts, the scapegoat was roughly treated by the people (cf. *Barn.* 7.8; m. *Yoma* 6.4). Both sources also mention the scarlet ribbon on the head of the scapegoat (cf. *Barn.* 7.8; m. *Yoma* 4.2; 6.6).

In this connection, there is a possibility that the scapegoat was seen as an evil image in the late Second Temple period. The scapegoat was sent to the unknown figure "Azazel" (cf. Lev 16:8–10). There is evidence that this figure was associated with one of the rebellious angels called Asa'el, appearing in the book of Watchers.⁴¹⁵ This demonic angel was imprisoned in a hole in the desert, while the scapegoat was dispatched to the desert (cf. *I En.* 6–11; Lev 16:21–22). Thus Stökl Ben Ezra suggests, 'The punishment of the demon resembles the treatment of the goat in aspects of geography, action, time and purpose'.⁴¹⁶ In the light of these

⁴¹⁴ Stökl Ben Ezra 2012, 175-6.

⁴¹⁵ The book of the Watchers is the first part of *I Enoch* (1–36). According to this book, Asa'el and other angels corrupted humans through intercourse with human women, as well as by teaching forbidden things to mankind. They were bound by the archangels, and thrown into the darkness (*I En.* 6–11). In 4Q180, 4Q181, and 4QBook of Giants^a, Asa'el is called "Azazel". Cf. Stökl Ben Ezra 2003, 87, n.42.

⁴¹⁶ For his detailed discussion, see *ibid.*, 87-8. See esp., Hanson 1977, 220-5.

points, there seem to be reasonable grounds for assuming that some first century Jews regarded the scapegoat as the object of “punishment”. Nevertheless, a conceptual analogy between the suffering servant and the scapegoat is not so robust. Granting that the scapegoat was roughly treated for whatever reason in the late Second Temple period, we have no evidence that first century Jews thought that the scapegoat was punished on their behalf. They might have simply wished to expel the creature that bore their sins from city of Jerusalem.

2. 4 Summary: sacrificial imagery in Isaiah 53

As discussed above, while the suffering servant depicted in Isaiah 53 could have evoked some sacrificial images, such as the paschal lamb or the scapegoat, these images remain, at best, impressionistic. It is difficult to claim that one of these images would have functioned as the decisive lens through which first century Jews grasped the meaning of the “suffering” of the servant. We shall now turn to a more fundamental reason why it is inappropriate to explore the theme of the suffering befalling the servant from the sacrificial perspective.

2. 5 Suffering and the covenantal curse

The sacrificial system described in Leviticus 1–16, which includes a whole range of blood-sacrificial rituals as well as the scapegoat ritual, was designed to *maintain* the covenant relationship between God and his people. As Williamson comments, ‘sacrifice was the means by which the central blessing of the covenant - communion between Yahweh and his people - was ensured and maintained’.⁴¹⁷ When the covenant between God and Israel remains sound,

⁴¹⁷ Williamson 2007, 111.

God's people benefit from the divine presence among them, and the daily sacrificial offering as "a pleasing aroma" plays the key role to maintain God's presence in the sanctuary (cf. Exod 29:38–46). Moreover, the people of Israel can escape the divine punishment by observing sacrificial remedies in a proper manner. However, once the covenant has been broken, God will abandon the sanctuary (Lev 26:31), and the people must endure the covenantal punishment, or the "curse" of the covenant, for the designated period (i.e., exile; cf. Lev 26:33–34). Davidson explains thus: 'The people thought that redoubled assiduity in ritual and increase in the splendour of their gifts would atone for their offences, however great. But their idea was a misconception of the very principle of the ritual system, which had respect only to those true to the fundamental conditions of the covenant relations which they had transgressed'.⁴¹⁸ What is more important, the sacrificial system itself has no power to *restore* the broken covenant.⁴¹⁹ The people of the broken covenant had lost the sanctuary, which made it physically impossible to observe any sacrificial practice. Hence, the restoration of the covenant ultimately depends on God's covenant faithfulness to the patriarchal promises (cf. Lev 26:42–45).

It is important to remember that Isaiah 40–55 as a whole addresses God's people in exile, the severest form of the covenantal curse and punishment. In this situation, the people have to endure the designated term of punishment. Serving the full term of punishment is an important theme in Isaiah 40–55, as Gary Anderson explains,

This image of the day laborer in the book of Job [Job 7:1–2] is crucial, I believe, for understanding the term in Second Isaiah. The laborer is hired for a specific unit of time, and at the end of that time, a commensurate wage will be owed for his service. Such is

⁴¹⁸ Davidson 1904, 318.

⁴¹⁹ See our review of E. P. Sanders in chapter 1.

the situation in the book of Second Isaiah, wherein the debt-slave is also obligated to fulfill a term of service. When the debt-slave has worked for a sufficient amount of time, the debts will be considered repaid and the term of slavery will end.⁴²⁰

Koole argues that the theological view that reckons exile as a debt payment appears in the book of Leviticus, as the phrase **יִרְצוּ אֶת־עֹנָם** (“they will pay their debt”) in 26:43 shows. Deutero-Isaiah uses exactly the same phrase in 40:2, which strongly suggests that he shares this particular understanding of exile. But Koole cautiously comments, ‘This “paying” does not in itself attribute merit to the suffering of the exiles. It is clear that the discharge of debt in [Isa] 43:25; 44:22; 48:9 is due to God’s initiative’.⁴²¹ The end of the exile can only be realised after the full penalty for the transgressions has been paid, but this would not happen without the divine initiative. In Deutero-Isaiah’s view, it seems that God singles out an innocent person, to suffer the covenantal punishment in full measure on behalf of his people (cf. 53:10).⁴²² Deutero-Isaiah does not explain how or why this suffering servant can bear the people’s sins and the consequences. Nonetheless, in the light of the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55, the most plausible context for the suffering and death of the servant would be such a covenantal context.

Hence, in order to explore the theological background of the “suffering” of the Isaianic servant, we need, apart from the Jewish sacrificial perspective, to bring into the discussion a quite different idea, namely, that the suffering of a faithful Israelite could terminate the covenantal curse. Although Deutero-Isaiah does not explicitly use the term “curse”, the Deuteronomic idea of exile as the curse of the covenant is clearly articulated in his discourse

⁴²⁰ Anderson 2009, 47.

⁴²¹ Koole 1997, 54.

⁴²² As Koole rightly indicates, ‘Verse 6 [of Isaiah 53] elaborates on the foregoing in a number of ways. The “we” is defined at the beginning and end of the v. as “we all”. This means that these “all” are clearly distinguished from the one substitute’ (1998, 254).

(e.g., Isa 43:27–28; 50:1). In this light, we describe the soteriology of Isaiah 53 as follows: the suffering servant redeems and heals his people by bearing their sins and iniquities, and vicariously suffering the punishment as the curse of the covenant (cf. Deut 27:15–26; 28:15–68; Dan 9:11).

2. 6 Sacrifice and Suffering in the late Second Temple period

At this stage, for the overall purpose of our study, we shall make a necessary detour, in order to apply what we discussed above to the first century milieu. In the Second Temple period, especially at the time of the Maccabean crisis, one can find evidence that some Jews believed that the sufferings of the faithful could reverse the effect of the covenantal curse (cf. 2Macc 6:12–17; 7:32–38).⁴²³ As John Collins succinctly describes, ‘The deaths of the brothers will be instrumental in bringing to an end the age of wrath. The punishment of the nation was just, but the sufferings of the martyrs absorb the punishment and so bring it to an end’.⁴²⁴ While it is outside the scope of our research to provide a full investigation of the origin of such an idea, it is helpful to consider the relationship between “suffering” and “sacrifice” in the late Second Temple context. Clements suggests that the idea that the “suffering” could restore the covenant had been developed against the backdrop of the loss of the First Temple, which inevitably entailed the loss of the sacrificial means for maintaining the covenant. In his words,

The entire experience of defeat and exile had sentenced Israel to “die among the nations

⁴²³ As to the theological views of 2 and 4 Maccabees, see, e.g., Williams, Sam 1975; Van Henten 1997; Williams, Jarvis 2010. Nickelsburg argues that there are some allusions to the Isaianic servant poems in 2 Maccabees 7 (cp. 2Macc 7:1 and Isa 50:6; 2Macc 7:10–11 and Isa 50:4; 2Macc 7:12 and Isa 52:14–5). Cf. Nickelsburg 1983, 243.

⁴²⁴ J. J. Collins 1981, 313.

in an unclean land” (see Amos 7:17)...Yet the very agency and means by which holiness had, in past years, been assured to Israel, namely, the temple of Yahweh in Jerusalem, had been destroyed and rendered ineffective. Without the temple there could be no sin-offering to guarantee the continuance of a holy relationship to Yahweh. The ravages of guilt and disease, understood as the threats and misfortunes from which divine holiness brought deliverance, could no longer be held at bay. Yet now Deutero-Isaiah introduces his boldest of assertions, that God will accept sufferings of the Servant-Israel, perhaps largely focused on the specific sufferings of the unnamed prophet himself, as the [קִשְׁיָא] by which the restored nation will be purified.⁴²⁵

It seems that this Isaianic “suffering” theology persisted even after the re-establishment of the Temple and sacrifices. At least some Jews during this period had mixed feelings about the Temple and its cultus. At one end of the scale there existed “rejectionist” groups, such as the Qumran community, who withdrew from the Temple and its activities.⁴²⁶ From their viewpoint, especially after the Hasmonean family took over the high-priestly office, the Second Temple and its priests were so corrupt that there was no atoning effect in the Temple cultus.⁴²⁷ At the opposite end there were those, such as aristocratic priests, who fully endorsed the validity of the Temple and its cultus.

In between these two extremes, there would have been Jews who observed sacrificial activities yet were somewhat dissatisfied with some aspects of the Temple and/or its ruling priests.⁴²⁸ For instance, the book of Tobit, which was probably written before the Maccabean

⁴²⁵ Clements 1998, 51.

⁴²⁶ Klawans defines “rejectionist” as follows: A rejectionist approach not only criticizes the current temple as inadequate in some way but also takes the critique to the next level by boycotting the temple and possibly by establishing some sort of alternative (2006, 147).

⁴²⁷ The “Animal Apocalypse (chs. 83–90)” in *1 Enoch*, which is probably composed at the time of Judas Maccabeus, expresses a negative view of the Second Temple: ‘And they began again to build as before and they raised up that tower and it was called the high tower. And they began again to place a table before the tower, but all the bread on it was polluted and not pure’ (89.73).

⁴²⁸ It would be anachronistic to use the rabbinic sources uncritically, but rabbinic remarks about the corruption of the priests do fit well with the kinds of concern we find in Second Temple texts. It seems,

crisis, expresses some ambiguity about the rebuilt Temple. In his testamentary discourse, Tobit says that when the people return from the exile, “they will rebuild the temple of God, but not like the first one until the period when the times of fulfilment shall come” (Tob 14:5). Intriguingly, Tobit goes on to say that after “they all return from their exile” the Temple will be restored yet again, but this time its glory will match all that the prophets promised.⁴²⁹ This clearly shows that the author of Tobit is not content with the Second Temple. To be sure, dissatisfaction with the Temple does not necessarily mean a sense of uncertainty about the efficacy of the sacrificial activities in the Temple. Presumably, those Jews who participated in the Temple activities believed in the efficacy of sacrifices.⁴³⁰ Nevertheless, it seems that some continued to believe that the covenant relationship had not been fully restored even though the Temple and its cultus had been reestablished. There are two reasons for this conclusion.

First, as N. T. Wright maintains, there was an undeniable gap between a temple filled with divine glory, which was foretold by some latter prophets (cf. Ezek 43:1–9; Hag 2:7–9), and the actual state of the Second Temple: ‘Nowhere in the so-called post exilic literature is there any passage corresponding to 1 Kings 8.10f., according to which, when Solomon’s temple had been finished, “a cloud filled the house of YHWH, so that the priests could not stand to minister because of the cloud; for the glory of YHWH filled the house of YHWH”’.⁴³¹ One of the crucial purposes of the sacrificial system is to maintain God’s presence, not least his *glory* (cf. Exod 29:43), in the sanctuary, as Klawans argues, ‘The purpose of the daily burnt offering –

then, that criticism of the priesthood was widespread at that time (cf. Klawans 2006, 177-181).

⁴²⁹ Cf. N. T. Wright 2013, 154-5.

⁴³⁰ As the positive descriptions of the activities in the Second Temple, see the *Letter of Aristeas* 83-99; Sir 50.

⁴³¹ N. T. Wright 1992, 269. See also N. T. Wright 2013, 95-108.

and perhaps some other sacrifices as well – is to provide regular and constant pleasing odors to the Lord, so that the divine presence will continually remain in the sanctuary’.⁴³² Moreover, it is vital to remember that the Second Temple was inherently incomplete due to the lack of the most important component where God’s glory appears, namely, the Ark of the Covenant (cf. Exod 25:22; Num 10:35–36). In principle, Jews throughout the Second Temple period could not adhere closely to the prescription of the Yom Kippur blood ritual (Lev 16:13–15).⁴³³ In the light of these points, the absence of the divine glory in the Temple might have raised a question, at least among some Jews, concerning the effectiveness of the Temple cultus and the status of the covenant relationship.

Second, which is closely related to the previous point, there was also an undeniable gap between a glorious restoration of Israel foretold by the prophets, and the actual state of Jews as a nation. According to the book of Zechariah, the future state of Jerusalem shall be: “And it shall be inhabited, for never again shall it be doomed to destruction; Jerusalem shall abide in security” (Zech 14:11; cf. Jer 33:16). Hence, some Jews of the time seem to have believed that the covenantal curse, as evidenced by their perennial subjugation to ungodly Gentiles, still bore down on their nation. The prevalence of the so-called “penitential prayers” (e.g., Neh 9; Isa 63:7–64:11; Dan 9:7–19) in the late Second Temple period corroborates this point.⁴³⁴ Schuller states, ‘When we move beyond the canon of the Hebrew Bible and into the Greco-Roman period, we do have a great deal of prayer material, if we put together everything from all the caves of the Judean Desert plus all the prayers and hymns that appear in the Apocrypha and

⁴³² Klawans 2006, 72.

⁴³³ See our discussion in chapter 3,3.4.

⁴³⁴ See especially Werline 1998.

Pseudepigrapha, plus prayers in Philo and Josephus'.⁴³⁵ Rom-Shiloni maintains that the thrust of these prayers is directed to the renewal of the covenant relationship: 'The complains and the petitions addressed to God in the laments designate *him* as the partner who should be called to renew the covenant relationship with his loyal, patient, though suffering, people (Lam 5:19–22)'.⁴³⁶ The wide popularity of this type of prayer strongly suggests that not a few Jews were uncertain whether the covenant relation with their God was fully restored. As James Scott argues, 'One reason that the curse and the exile were seen as continuing during this period is that the glorious OT expectations of national restoration failed to materialize'.⁴³⁷

The idea that some kind of "suffering" might help to restore the covenant seems to have arisen in this historical context. In particular, on occasions when Jews were banned from conducting sacrificial practices and annual feasts (cf. 1 Macc 1:41–53; 2 Macc 6:1–11), such an idea would have been brought to the fore. This idea, however, coexisted with their belief in the efficacy of and need for sacrifices. This is because some Jews suffered and endured the harsh persecutions exactly for the sake of the restoration of the Temple cultus (cf. 2 Macc 10:1–8). All of this suggests the possibility that some Jews of this time imagined that both sacrifices and suffering were effective in relation to the covenant, though in different ways:⁴³⁸ the former helped to maintain the covenant,⁴³⁹ the latter helped to mitigate the ongoing effects of the

⁴³⁵ Schuller 2007, 11. Cf, e.g., Bar 1:5–3:8; 3 Macc 2:1–20; Pr Man; Tob 3:2–6; 1QS 1:24–2:1.

⁴³⁶ Rom-Shiloni 2006, 60 [Rom-Shiloni's emphasis].

⁴³⁷ Scott 1993a, 649.

⁴³⁸ N. T. Wright argues, 'In different ways, sacrifice, suffering, and the experience of exile itself were held to carry redemptive significance' (1992, 301).

⁴³⁹ In this connection, in the Second Temple period, some Jews might have thought that the means of atonement was not limited to the Levitical sacrificial system, as Sirah 3:30b writes, "so almsgiving atones for sin". See also Sir 35:1–13; Jas 5:19–20. Cf. Gathercole 2002, 39.

covenantal curse.⁴⁴⁰ This point is highly suggestive to the overall purpose of our study of Paul's soteriology.

With the discussion concerning the meaning of "suffering" in mind, we shall now explore how Paul might have understood the fourth servant poem within the broader context of Isaiah 49–55.

3. Isaiah 49–55

3. 1 Introduction

The purpose of this section is to delineate the major themes as well as the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55 to which Paul would have paid particular attention. Prior to this investigation, it is necessary to clarify the aim and scope of our research.

Our starting point lies in the fact that Paul identifies Jesus with the suffering servant in Isaiah 53. Given this identification, other weighty issues are sorted out accordingly. For instance, for those Jewish Christians who were convinced that Jesus was the suffering servant depicted in Isaiah 53, the "many" who were to be justified by the servant were almost automatically identified with themselves (cf. Rom 5:19; Isa 53:11).⁴⁴¹ With these assumptions, the following study shows that there are three major themes in Isaiah 49–55: the fulfilment of Abrahamic promises, the new Exodus, and the new creation. These visions are accomplished by the suffering servant, whose dual task is to redeem Israel as well as to bring salvation to the nations

⁴⁴⁰ For some Jews, such as the author of 4 Maccabees, it seems that these two concepts are more or less conflated. See chapter 3.3.2.

⁴⁴¹ See the detailed discussion offered by Shum as to the relationship between Hebrew texts of Isaiah 53:11 and Romans 5:19 (2002, 196-200).

(cf. Isa 49:6). What is remarkable is that this is precisely the underlying narrative flow of the epistle to the Galatians, as will be demonstrated in the next chapter. Hence, the investigation conducted below is highly relevant to our main concern in the next chapter: Galatians 3:13 and its distinctive soteriological idea.

3. 2 Macro structure of Isaiah 49–55

We examine first the macro structure of Isaiah 49–55. John Sawyer stresses the importance of the motif of “personified Zion”: ‘This [a close study of the Zion passages] is merely to highlight the vividness and effectiveness of the story, and the resemblance between the two motifs, the one [i.e., the servant poems] studied almost to the point of idolatry by Christian exegetes, the other almost totally ignored’.⁴⁴² Patricia Tull Willey provides a convincing picture, arguing that Isaiah 49–54 consists of the interplay between two protagonists, Zion and the servant of the Lord:

Attention in chapters 49–54 actually alternates between Zion and the other metaphorical figure, the so-called “servant of YHWH,” who sometimes speaks and sometimes is spoken for. These sections are devoted to each figure. These sections alternate with one another:

Isa 49:1–13	Servant section
Isa 49:14–50:3	Zion section
Isa 50:4–11	Servant section
[Isa 51:1–8	Section addressed to masculine plural “you”]
Isa 51:9–52:12	Zion section
Isa 52:13–53:12	Servant section
Isa 54:1–17	Zion section

⁴⁴² Sawyer 1989, 93. See also Woude 2011.

... Because of the interpretive weight traditionally given to the servant, relationships between the two entities have only recently begun to be examined.⁴⁴³

Willey's structural analysis is helpful, and sheds light on the neglected yet prominent figure of "personified Zion/Jerusalem". Indeed, by paying particular attention to this figure, we can see clearly a narrative development in Isaiah 49–54, which highlights the dramatic reversal of the fortune of Zion (from the lamentation in 49:14 to the great joy in 54:1).⁴⁴⁴ Blenkinsopp also comments that the appearance of this figure signals that the narrative of Isaiah 40–55 moves to a new stage:

With this dialogue between Zion and Yahveh [sic] we reach a turning point in the book, and in the second main section of the book in particular. Up to this point the focus has been on Israel/Jacob, and Jerusalem/Zion has been mentioned only sporadically as city (35:10; 44:26, 28; 46:13) and as representative of Jewish communities (40:2; 41:27). From now on, this situation will be reversed, and the real and symbolic Jerusalem will emerge out of the shadows.⁴⁴⁵

While the voice of Zion often represents the voice of the people of Israel (e.g., Isa 49:14), this voice is not the same as the voice of the servant. Hence, given that the servant also represents Israel, this means that Israel is somehow bifurcated, as Childs aptly comments, 'The name Israel has largely been replaced by Zion/Jerusalem [in chapters 49–55]. The servant, now the

⁴⁴³ Willey 1997, 105-6. See also Blenkinsopp 2002, 339-40. To be sure, the implicit yet most important protagonist is the God of Israel himself, as Mettinger comments, 'The idea of the Divine Warrior, who vindicates his kingship in a new victory over the forces of chaos, is something that gives a profound unity to the whole book of Isaiah 40–55. From the point of view of contents 51:9–52:12 with the proclamation of YHWH as king in 52:7 constitutes the summit' (1997, 150).

⁴⁴⁴ As Sawyer aptly comments, 'In the dozen or so passages about Zion there is a clear progression, from abandonment, loneliness and fear to fulfilment and joy: and the same goes for the Servant whose fortunes are traced from a time when he is weak and afraid and feels like a worm (41.14) to heroic suffering and triumph in ch. 53' (1989, 99).

⁴⁴⁵ Blenkinsopp 2002, 310.

embodiment of Israel (49:3), moves to center stage and his response in suffering obedience is set in striking contrast to the complaint of Israel. The opposition and scorn of his opponents from within Israel mounts until it reaches a climax in chapter 53'.⁴⁴⁶ The narrative in Isaiah 49–54 revolves around the sharp contrast between the two protagonists.

Hence, we basically concur with Willey's analysis of the structure of Isaiah 49–54. It is, however, possible to claim that both personified Zion and the servant of the Lord are implicitly mentioned in Isaiah 55 as well. While the servant of the Lord is not explicitly mentioned in this chapter, one of his crucial vocations, that of bringing salvation to the nations, is clearly articulated in 55:4–5. Likewise, although personified Zion does not appear in Isaiah 55, her image seems to be alluded to in 55:13. In 51:3, the transformation of Zion from the wilderness into God's garden is foretold, and 55:13 describes the realisation of this vision. Thus, it is valid to include Isaiah 55 in the scope of our investigation. In what follows, we shall closely examine the roles of these two protagonists respectively, and consider the relationship between the two in Isaiah 49–55. This study will be the foundation of our investigation of Galatians in the next chapter where one of our goals is to demonstrate the close relationship between Galatians 3:13, which potentially alludes to the suffering servant, and 4:27, which explicitly mentions personified Zion in Isaiah 54:1.

⁴⁴⁶ Childs 2001, 390.

3. 3 Personified Zion

3. 3. 1 Zion as the city as well as its inhabitants

Concerning personified Zion, Willey explains, ‘In Second Isaiah the city of Zion is personified as a woman bitterly lamenting her own destruction. This image of the city as weeping “Daughter Zion” shares important characteristics not only with previous Judahite literature, especially Lamentations, but also with Mesopotamian city laments’.⁴⁴⁷ Thus, in the first place, “Zion” represents the anthropomorphic image of the ruined city of Jerusalem itself. Zion is also described with a maternal image. The book of Lamentations and Isaiah 49–54 share the image of Zion as the mother of its inhabitants (cf. Lam 1:5, 16; Isa 49:20, 22, 25; 51:18, 20; 54:1). The lamentations of Zion are occasioned by the loss of her “children” (i.e., its inhabitants) due to their deportation. What Zion eagerly awaits is the repatriation of those who are living in foreign lands. Moreover, Baltzer suggests that the barrenness of Zion described in Isaiah 54:1 is associated with that of Sarah (Isa 51:2): ‘at the end of the primeval history and before the beginning of the stories about patriarchs and matriarchs, the text read: “Now Sarah was barren; she had no child.” This is a very marked passage, in which the root עקר occurs for the first time in the book of Genesis’.⁴⁴⁸

In Isaiah 49–54, Zion does not simply refer to the ruined city of Jerusalem. Zion is also a figurative representation of the people of exile (i.e., the “children” of Zion/Jerusalem), who

⁴⁴⁷ Willey 1997, 106.

⁴⁴⁸ Baltzer, 2001, 434. See also Brueggemann 1998, 151; Oswalt 1998, 415-6; Blenkinsopp 2000, 361. Jeremiah, on the other hand, associates Rachel with the land of Ramah, from where the people were deported to Babylon (Jer 31:15).

have been afflicted and enslaved by foreign powers (cf. Isa 51:16; 52:3–5).⁴⁴⁹ A close examination of the following passage illustrates this point:

Isaiah 49:13–15: Sing for joy, O Heavens, and exult, O earth; break forth, O mountains, into singing! For the Lord has comforted his people, and will have compassion on his suffering ones. But Zion said, ‘The Lord has forsaken me, my Lord has forgotten me.’ Can a woman forget her nursing-child, or show no compassion for the children of her womb? Even these may forget, yet I will not forget you.

Here, the God of Israel is described as the mother of the children, while the Lord is often depicted as the husband of Zion (cf. Isa 50:1). In this light, it seems that the “Zion” that is complaining is not simply the ruined city of Jerusalem that has lost its inhabitants, but also the people in exile, the “children” of mother Zion.

3. 3. 2 Three themes associated with Zion

(i) Abrahamic promise

Three points should be made with reference to the theme of personified Zion in Isaiah 49–54.

First, the hope of the restoration of Zion is rooted in God’s faithfulness to the patriarchal promises. Given that the desolation of personified Zion is compared to the barrenness of Sarah, it is plausible to find an implicit yet substantial relationship between the promise of the repatriation of its inhabitants and God’s promise to Abraham as to his heir (Gen 15:1–21; Isa 51:2). In 54:3–4, Deutero-Isaiah seemingly alludes to God’s promise to Jacob in Genesis

⁴⁴⁹ Torrey 1928, 402.

28:13–14, which is the repetition and reconfirmation of God’s promise to Abraham in Genesis 22. If this is correct, the restoration of Zion described in 54:1–2 is juxtaposed with the patriarchal promises. Strikingly, the very Abrahamic promise to which Paul refers in Galatians 3:8 is reaffirmed in Genesis 28:14.

The phrase “do not fear” in Isaiah 54:4 also has a patriarchal ring, which repeatedly appears in conjunction with God’s promise of blessing to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (Gen 15:1; 26:24; 46:3; cf. Isa 44:2). The Abrahamic promises occupy a pivotal role not only in Genesis, but also in other parts of the Pentateuch. Indeed, the Exodus itself is a fulfilment of God’s promise to Abraham (cf. Gen 15:13–16; Exod 2:24). Likewise, in Isaiah 49–55, the Abrahamic promises are the basis upon which the hope of the restoration of Zion is built.

(ii) New Exodus

The second point, which is closely related to the first, concerns the depiction in Exodus language of the deliverance of Zion. Many scholars argue that the new Exodus is the central theme of Isaiah 40–55 as a whole.⁴⁵⁰ Indeed, the Exodus images are scattered throughout Isaiah 49–55 (e.g., Isa 51:9–11; 52:3–5, 12).

A heavy use of Exodus imagery becomes intelligible by considering the fact that the addressees of Deutero-Isaiah are viewed as being in a state of “exile”. In fact, “exile” and “exodus” are two sides of the same coin, as Goldingay comments, ‘End-of-exile faith has parallel features to exodus faith’.⁴⁵¹ The ideas of both “exile” and “exodus” are fundamentally

⁴⁵⁰ See, e.g., Anderson 1962, 177-95; 1967, 127-31; Blenkinsopp 1966, 22-6; 2002, 226-8; Stuhlmüller 1970, 59-98, 272; Oswalt 1998, 424; Watts 2000, 609-10; Pao 2000, 51-9; Bauckham 2008, 8.

⁴⁵¹ Goldingay 1994, 39.

rooted in the notion of “covenant”. Whereas “exile” is the climactic curse of the covenant triggered by grievous sins,⁴⁵² “exodus” is a sign of the faithfulness of God to the covenant, which leads to the renewal of the covenant.⁴⁵³ As the first Exodus was the fulfilment of God’s covenantal promise to Abraham (cf. Gen 15:13–14; Exod 2:24–25), so also the Isaianic new Exodus is predicated on God’s faithfulness to his patriarchal, covenantal promises (cf. Isa 51:2).

(iii) New Creation

Thirdly, the restoration of the fortune of Zion is coupled with the realisation of the new creation for the whole created order.

Isaiah 51:3: For the Lord will comfort Zion; he will comfort all her waste places, and *will make her wilderness like Eden, her desert like a garden of the Lord*; joy and gladness will be found in her, thanksgiving and the voice of song.

Isaiah 55:12–13: For you shall go out in joy, and be led back in peace; the mountains and the hills before you shall burst into song, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands. *Instead of the thorn shall come up the cypress; instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle*; and it shall be to the Lord for a memorial, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.

There exists a clear thematic connection between 51:3 and 55:12–13, as Goldingay and Payne explain: ‘Cypress and myrtle are the kind of trees that turn wilderness into woodland (cf. 41.19)’.⁴⁵⁴ In 51:3, the hope of the restoration of Jerusalem is imaginatively developed by way of a visionary transformation of the wilderness into the Eden-like new creation, and associated

⁴⁵² Cf. Lev 26:33; Deut 4:27; 28:63; Jer 9:16; 12:14; Dan 9:7, 11; Ezek 12:15; 22:15; Zech 7:14.

⁴⁵³ Cf. Exod 2:24; 6:5; Lev 26:42, 45; Deut 7:8; Ps 105:8; 106:45; 111:5.

⁴⁵⁴ Goldingay and Payne, 2006 (vol. 2), 379. Moreover, as Blenkinsopp argues (2002, 372–3), Isaiah 55:12–13 can be viewed as a reversal of the curse upon the land of Eden described in Genesis 3:18.

with the promise of numerous descendants of Abraham (cf. Isa 51:2; 54:1–2). It is thus valid to see 55:12–13 as the affirmation of the statement in 51:3.

Deutero-Isaiah repeatedly and emphatically stresses that the God of Israel is the creator God of the whole universe (e.g., Isa 40:28). From this theological point of view, therefore, the redemption of Israel is inseparably linked to the redemption of the entire universe. The hope of a new creation is one of the central motifs in Isaiah 40–55 (e.g., Isa 44:1–5). Hence, 55:12–13 should be seen as a climactic statement of the whole section.

3. 4 The dual task of the servant of the Lord

3. 4. 1 Redemption of Israel

Having explored the theme of Zion in Isaiah 49–55, we now examine another protagonist, the servant of the Lord, who accomplishes the redemption of Zion.

The primary task of the servant is to accomplish the redemption of Zion, which is a figurative representation of the exiled people. However, not all Israel responds positively to the salvific works of the servant. A close examination of Isaiah 50:10–11 will clarify this point:

Isaiah 50:10–11: Who among you fears the Lord and obeys the voice of his servant, who walks in the darkness and has no light, yet trusts in the name of the Lord and relies upon his God? But all of you are kindlers of fire, lighters of firebrands. Walk in the flame of your fire, and among the brands that you have kindled! This is what you shall have from my hand: you shall lie down in torment.

Blenkinsopp stresses the importance of this passage, ‘The concluding verses are crucial for interpreting the passage as a whole and perhaps also for the interpretation of Isa 40–55 as a

whole'.⁴⁵⁵ In 50:10, it is noteworthy that the phrase "fears the Lord" is juxtaposed with that of "obeys the voice of the servant of the Lord". Needless to say, God's people who obey the voice of the servant are not identical with the servant himself. Thus, the "servant" here does not represent the nation as a whole but an individual whose authority is given by God. In OG, this point becomes clearer: "Who among you is the one who fears the Lord? Let him hear the voice of his servant".

More important, the whole passage suggests that there are two groups within Israel. One group of people trusts God and his servant even in the darkness. The other cannot wait for God's help and thus try to kindle the fire by themselves. Indeed, the nation of Israel is divided over this servant. Some obey the voice of the servant, but the others do not, as Beuken maintains, 'In der Paränese wendet derselbe kultische Beauftragte sich an zwei unterschiedliche Gruppen: die Gerechten und die Gottlosen'.⁴⁵⁶

The fact that Israel is divided over the servant is an important hermeneutical key to interpreting Isaiah 49–55 as a whole. Blenkinsopp argues, 'With this structural feature we are on firmer ground since, beginning with chap. 49, we note a very different set of concerns. We hear no more about Cyrus and the fate of Babylon, no more satire and polemic is directed against Babylonian religion and culture, and attention is focused exclusively on matters internal to the community'.⁴⁵⁷ The task of the servant is to redeem Israel, but his redemptive work causes discord within Israel.

⁴⁵⁵ Blenkinsopp 2002, 322.

⁴⁵⁶ Beuken 1973, 180. Blenkinsopp also explains: 'The speaker therefore is distinguishing between those who revere Yahveh and heed the prophetic message, even though bewildered and confused, who are urged to trust that the predictions will be fulfilled, on the one hand; and those who choose to live by their own lights, on the other hand' (2002, 322). See also Childs 2001, 396.

⁴⁵⁷ Blenkinsopp 1997, 157.

3. 4. 2 Salvation for the nations

Deutero-Isaiah envisages the servant's second task as extending salvation far beyond the boundaries of Israel to the ends of the earth. As Isaiah 49:6 says: "It is too light a thing that you should be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob and to restore the survivors of Israel; I will give you as a light to the nations, that my salvation may reach to the end of the earth". The theme of universal salvation through the servant of the Lord becomes more conspicuous in OG Isaiah. For instance, Isaiah 49:8 in MT reads: "I have kept you and given you as a covenant to the people (עַם)". The Hebrew word עַם can signify the people of Israel (e.g., Isa 62:12), a foreign nation (e.g., 10:6), or even humanity in general (e.g., Gen 11:6). However, the corresponding word ἔθνη in OG is plural, which clearly represents the "nations" rather than merely the nation of Israel. The OG rendering is particularly conspicuous in the light of the fact that the translator(s) of OG rendered the word עַם as γένους in its singular form in 42:6.⁴⁵⁸ Ekblad thus comments, 'It appears that while the MT emphasizes liberation for Israel, the LXX stresses salvation for the nations. According to the LXX Israel serves as mediator between God and the nations, the servant through whom God's salvation is accomplished'.⁴⁵⁹ The theme of universal salvation is once again stressed in Isaiah 55:

Isaiah 55:4–5: See, I made him a witness to the peoples, a leader and commander for the peoples. See, you shall call nations that you do not know, and nations that do not know you shall run to you, because of the Lord your God, the Holy One of Israel, for he has glorified you.

⁴⁵⁸ The same word appears in 49:6 in the OG, but not in MT.

⁴⁵⁹ Ekblad 1999, 123-4.

While the identity of the “he” who has glorified the “you” (i.e., the God of Israel) in this passage is not specified, the thematic connection to the “servant”, through whom God is to be glorified, is incontestable (cf. Isa 49:3). In this connection, the “glory of God” and the “arm of the Lord” (cf. Isa 52:10; 53:1) are used interchangeably in the Exodus narrative (cf. Exod 14:17–18; 15:16). Hence, verse 53:1 can be paraphrased in this way: “to whom has the Glory of God been revealed?” It is the suffering servant through whom the God of Israel is to be glorified. Deutero-Isaiah envisions this glorification of the God of Israel being witnessed by all the nations (Isa 52:10). At this point, we can find a strong thematic unity between 52:10 and 55:4–5. That is, the servant of the Lord has glorified the God of Israel in the presence of all the nations, which causes them to run to the God of Israel. In the narrative flow in Isaiah 49–55 the salvation of the God of Israel has been extended from Israel to the nations. Moreover, salvation for the nations *through* Israel is also the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise, since God made an oath to Abraham that his seed (σπέρμα; Gen 22:18 in OG) would bless the nations, to which Paul refers in Galatians 3:8.

3. 5 Summary

As discussed above, the fact that Zion and the servant of the Lord appear alternately in Isaiah 49–55 strongly suggests a close relationship between the two. The servant assumes the role of redeeming Zion, who represents the Israelites under the covenantal curse (i.e., exile), through bearing their sins as well as suffering punishment on their behalf. The redemption of Zion is the fulfilment of the patriarchal promises, and is also described as a new Exodus. Moreover, the restoration of Zion will herald the new creation of the entire created order. While the primary

task of the servant is the redemption of Zion/Israel, his salvific work for his fellow countrymen is not accepted by all of them. Rather, his ministry provokes internal strife within the nation of Israel. On the other hand, the scope of salvation brought about by the servant is not limited to the boundaries of Israel.

Whilst there are several noticeable differences between MT and OG, the basic story line of each text is by and large identical. Although OG seems to put more emphasis on the theme of universal salvation, this theme is no less important in MT.

4. Conclusion

This chapter has established two points. First, we examined the validity of the contemporary scholarly view that sacrificial ideas are at the heart of soteriology of Isaiah 53. From the first century viewpoint, while sacrificial images such as the paschal lamb or the scapegoat might be detectable, the abuse and harassment of the servant makes it difficult to liken him to any sacrificial offering. While the description of the suffering servant in OG is on some points markedly different from that of MT, neither tradition clearly depicts the servant as a sacrificial offering to God. Rather, the theme of suffering in Isaiah 53 is more intelligible in a covenantal context wherein the servant suffers in full the covenantal punishment and curse on behalf of his people.

Second, we examined the major themes of Isaiah 49–55, to which Paul would have paid special attentions. This section depicts the interplay between two protagonists: Zion and the suffering servant. The servant bears the sins of his people, and thereby accomplishes the deliverance of Zion. This deliverance is coloured with the Exodus language, and understood as

the fulfilment of patriarchal promises. Furthermore, the redemption of Zion leads to the redemption of the entire world, which also fulfils the Abrahamic promise.

In the next chapter, we explore ways in which these findings relate to Galatians. In particular, we ask whether the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55 observed above can be found in the narrative substructure of this epistle.

Chapter 5: Christ became a curse for us

1. Introduction

1. 1 Purpose of this chapter

We now focus on one more critical passage for our study: Galatians 3:13. In the light of our study of Jewish sacrificial practices and ideas, it seems that the word *κατάρα* in this passage should not be interpreted in a sacrificial context, since the cursedness of Christ is incompatible with the holiness of sacrifice. We have examined, however, that Paul adopts several sacrificial terms in his soteriological statements (e.g., Rom 3:25). That Paul uses both sacrificial and non-sacrificial terms in his salvific statements raises a question of whether his soteriology is based on a consistent understanding of sacrificial ideas.

In what follows, we shall argue that Galatians 3:13 is indeed another piece of evidence that Paul understands the meaning of sacrifice within the covenantal framework. We contend that Paul here addresses the problem of those who are under the curse of the covenant. Since the sacrificial system is not designed for the termination of the covenantal curse, Paul sheds light on a different aspect of Jesus' death as a solution of the plight of Jews.

In the previous chapter, we demonstrated the meaning of the "suffering" of the servant in Isaiah 53 is most intelligible in the covenantal context. This chapter argues that Paul's statement in Galatians 3:13— "Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us"— makes good sense in this Isaianic context. This may sound odd, since Paul neither quotes from Isaiah 53 in this verse, nor does Deutero-Isaiah state that the suffering servant became a *κατάρα*.

Nevertheless, we shall demonstrate 1) that there exists a structural similarity between Isaiah 49–55 and Galatians 2–4 at the level of underlying narrative,⁴⁶⁰ and thus 2) that the soteriology of Isaiah 49–55 forms the crucial backbone of Galatians 3:13–14.

As we saw above, the theme of the redemption of Zion is closely related to the three themes of the Abrahamic promises, the new Exodus, and the new creation. Dumbrell argues that the Abrahamic promises function as the basis for the fulfilment of the other two themes (the new Exodus and the new creation) and of another important theme (salvation for the nations) in Isaiah 49–55:

Already in the prophecy the use of the double name Jacob/Israel (cf. 48:1) has indicated the validity of the old election motifs and thus the belief is clear that the disaster of 587 B. C. has not cancelled out the ancient promises...the restoration of Zion means for Isaiah the direct continuity of the Abrahamic promises. This leads in [Isa 51:] 4–6 to the incorporation of the nations into the new sphere of salvation. In this way the second arm of the Abrahamic promises, Israel's function in respect of the world, is referred to...After an address of reassurance to the redeemed in vv. [Isa 51:] 7–8, direct links between Creation, Exodus, and second Exodus are forged in vv. 9–11. The implicit link between creation, Sinai and Davidic covenants (cf. the specific mention of Zion in v. 11) is therefore offered. All occurs within the more specific Abrahamic framework with which the chapter has begun.⁴⁶¹

In this chapter, it will be shown that the same collocation of ideas is found in Galatians. In Paul's discourse, the Abrahamic promises function as the foundation for other major themes,

⁴⁶⁰ In this section, we use the terms “narrative” and “story” as being basically synonymous. The term “story” itself is elusive, though. In our argument, “story” does not simply signify a literary form. Rather, “story” is taken to be the foundation of the epistemological activities through which humans perceive reality and grasp its significance. I basically follow the argument of N. T. Wright that “story” is the basis of human worldview. See N. T. Wright 1992, 31-144; 2013a, 456-537.

⁴⁶¹ Dumbrell 1984, 191-2. See also Goldingay 1994, 44-5.

such as salvation for Gentiles, the new Exodus, and the new creation. Such a similarity between Isaiah 49–55 and Galatians is not coincidental. Rather, this suggests that Paul’s arguments in this letter are deeply rooted in Isaiah 49–55.

Before proceeding to this discussion, we should review how Pauline exegetes have understood Galatians 3:13.

1. 2 Scapegoat or Deuteronomic curse?

The peculiar expression “Christ becoming a curse” has puzzled Pauline interpreters for centuries. How does this contribute to the salvation of mankind? A long-standing hermeneutical tradition associates this statement with the scapegoat ritual. Around the end of the first century CE, the author of the *Epistle of Barnabas* likens Jesus to the *cursed* scapegoat that bears the sins of God’s people.⁴⁶² This does not mean that the author of *Barnabas* must have interpreted Galatians 3:13 in this way, since it is not certain whether he even knew Galatians.⁴⁶³ Still, the fact remains that in the early stages of the Christian movement the association of Christ’s death with a “curse” was linked with the scapegoat image. Some other Church Fathers also compare Jesus to the scapegoat.⁴⁶⁴ Much later, John Calvin argued:

The mode of expiation with the other goat is now more clearly explained, viz., that it should be placed before God, and that the priest should lay his hands on its head, and

⁴⁶² Cf. *Barn.* 7:6–8; 16:3–4. There is a scholarly consensus that *Barnabas* was written *after* the destruction of the Temple in 70 CE.

⁴⁶³ The Pauline influence on *Barnabas* is a matter of scholarly debate. Paget comments, ‘Of course, whenever we debate the subject of Paul’s influence on an early Christian writer, we immediately face a number of methodological problems. If we do *not* know that a writer knew Paul’s letter, what criteria might we use to determine if a writer is making use of them?’ (1994, 208 [Paget’s emphasis]).

⁴⁶⁴ Cf. See Justin, *Dialogue with Trypho* 40; Tertullian, *Against Marcion* 3.7; Origen, *Homilies on Leviticus* 1–16 9.5(4).

confess the sins of the people, so that he may throw the curse on the goat itself. This, as I have said, was the only bloodless (*ἀναιματον*) sacrifice; yet it is expressly called an “offering,” with reference, however, to the slaying of the former goat, and was, therefore, as to its efficacy for propitiation, by no means to be separated from it...Another means, therefore, of making atonement to God was revealed when Christ, “being made a curse for us,” transferred to Himself the sins which alienated men from God. (2Cor. v.19; Gal. iii. 13.)⁴⁶⁵

In the modern era, moreover, a number of commentators view the scapegoat ritual as the crucial cultic background of Galatians 3:13.⁴⁶⁶

Insofar as the history of interpretation is concerned, therefore, there are solid grounds for connecting the cursed Christ with the scapegoat. Nonetheless, an analogy between Christ and the scapegoat suffers from two weaknesses. First, Paul is not quoting from Leviticus 16:22, but from Deuteronomy 21:23. As F. F. Bruce comments, ‘The text which Paul quotes to this effect had reference originally to the exposure of the corpse of an executed criminal’.⁴⁶⁷ The scapegoat was not executed in lieu of criminals who deserved capital punishment. As already discussed in the previous chapter, some first century Jews might have imagined that the scapegoat was subject to divine punishment, as the fallen angel Asa’el/Azazel was. Yet, we have no evidence that such an understanding of the scapegoat was held by the majority of first century Jews.

Philo, a first century Jewish thinker, describes the scapegoat as follows: ‘The one on whom the lot fell was to be sacrificed to God, the other was to be sent out into a trackless and desolate

⁴⁶⁵ Calvin 1950, 2:319-2.

⁴⁶⁶ E.g., Lightfoot 1902, 139; Schwartz 1983; McLean 1996, 113-40; Stökl Ben Ezra 2003, 173-6; Finlan 2004, 101-11; Eberhart 2011b, 124-5.

⁴⁶⁷ Bruce 1982, 164. Hays further comments, ‘by Paul’s time the passage had also been read by some other Jewish interpreters as a reference to the Roman punishment of crucifixion’ (2000, 260). Cf. 4Q169 Frags.3-4 I 6-8; 11Q19 64.9-13; Dunn 1993, 178; Martínez 2014, 56-60.

wilderness *bearing on its back the curses which had lain upon the transgressors* (ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ κομίζοντα τὰς ὑπὲρ τῶν πλημμελησάντων ἀράς) who have now been purified by conversion to the better life and through their new obedience have washed away their old disobedience to the law' (*Spec. laws* 1.188b). According to Philo, the scapegoat *bears* the curses, rather than *becomes* a curse. This description is congruous with the basic function of the scapegoat in the Yom Kippur rite, its role being to *carry away* what is undesirable for God's people. In Philo's statement, the scapegoat is depicted as a *carrier* of the curses, rather than the *object* of them. There would seem to be a subtle yet substantial difference between Philo's account and Paul's expression of "Christ *becoming* a curse". By quoting Deuteronomy 21:23, Paul stresses that Christ, who was hanged on a tree, was himself actually cursed (ἐπικατάρατος). This weakens the supposed analogy between the scapegoat and the cursed Christ.

Second, Paul most probably wants his readers to connect Deuteronomy 21:23 with Deuteronomy 27:26, quoted in 3:10. Both of these passages pronounce a "curse" on the law-breaker.⁴⁶⁸ The "curse" Paul has in mind here would then not simply be the individual curse associated with the person who hangs on a tree, but the corporate curse that befalls those who are ἐξ ἔργων νόμου.⁴⁶⁹ The sacrificial system is designed to allow law breakers to compensate for their sins through offering a sacrifice to God. Once the worst covenantal curses, such as exile, have been unleashed, however, the usual sacrificial remedies, including the scapegoat ritual, are of no avail. According to Leviticus 26:43, the designated passage of time

⁴⁶⁸ As Hays argues, 'Paul omits "by God," leaving the source of the curse unspecified, and uses the same word for "cursed" that appears in Deut 27:26, ensuring that the reader will link the passages together' (2000, 260). C. Stanley also indicates, 'Paul replaced the Perfect *κεκατηραμένος* with the neutral adjective *ἐπικατάρατος*, which was ready at hand from his previous citation of Deut 27.26 in Gal 3.10' (1992, 246). Cf. Bruce 1982, 165-6; Witherington 1998, 235-7.

⁴⁶⁹ We shall discuss this point fully in what follows.

(the “sabbatical years”) must elapse, and the covenantal people must endure punishment during that period before the exile will come to an end. Buchanan explains, ‘When Israel sinned she was expected to be treated like a covenanter in debt. If she failed to observe sabbath years, then the Lord would enforce the required obligations of rest for the land by removing the people to a foreign country for the number of sabbath years she had overlooked’.⁴⁷⁰ This sabbatical theology is unmistakably at work behind some biblical passages, such as Isaiah 40:2, Jeremiah 16:18, 25:11, 34:8–22, and Daniel 9:1–27.⁴⁷¹ From this viewpoint, the usual sacrificial measures are not sufficient to *terminate* the covenantal curse and restore the covenant relationship. If Paul sees the nation of Israel as still under the state of exile in a figurative sense,⁴⁷² the theological background of Galatians 3:13 cannot be adequately explained by the scapegoat ritual, since, as a part of the sacrificial system, that ritual would not be effective in mitigating the curse.

Finlan, who argues for a “scapegoat” soteriology, questions the view that the Deuteronomic curse is at the core of Paul’s statement in 3:13: ‘Salvation in the Deuteronomic setting comes if the whole community repents (Deut 30:1–3). A Deuteronomic curse is not removed by someone “becoming a curse” for the community; this metaphor requires either a Levitical or a Greek (*pharmakos*) background. That is the image in Gal 3:13b, even though Paul starts out with the Deuteronomic curse in 3:10’.⁴⁷³ However, as Finlan himself concedes,⁴⁷⁴ Isaiah 53 clearly expresses the idea that one person suffers and endures curses for the sake of

⁴⁷⁰ Buchanan 1970, 9.

⁴⁷¹ Ibid., 9–15.

⁴⁷² We shall consider this point in due course.

⁴⁷³ Finlan 2004, 105.

⁴⁷⁴ Ibid., 107.

the whole community. We posit, therefore, that *the theological background of Galatians 3:13 should be found in Isaiah 53*, as Schoeps maintains.⁴⁷⁵ The Deuteronomic curse is indeed the crucial backdrop of Galatians, but Deuteronomy 30 does not provide a clear-cut explanation of *how* the covenantal curse is to be dissolved. We contend that, in keeping with the findings in the previous chapter, Paul has identified such a solution in Isaiah 53 rather than in the scapegoat ritual.

1. 3 Harmon's intertextual analysis between Isaiah and Galatians

In what follows, we shall demonstrate that the most plausible theological background of Galatians 3:13 is the suffering servant in Isaiah 53. One of the crucial goals in this chapter is to establish a substantial tie between Galatians 3:13 and 4:27. In Galatians, 4:27 is almost the only passage that quotes directly from the book of Isaiah (cf. Isa 54:1), and this verse is critically important for an understanding of the Isaianic influence on the epistle to the Galatians. As discussed in the previous chapter, the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55 revolves around the interplay between the two protagonists, Zion and the servant. Isaiah 54:1 is at the zenith of the narrative flow where the restoration of Zion is accomplished through the suffering of the servant. If Isaiah 53 is an element in the theological backdrop of Galatians 3:13, there is likely to be a clear connection between Galatians 3:13 and 4:27 in Paul's train of thought. The children of Zion, who now consist of both Jews and Gentiles, have come to birth through the suffering of the servant, namely, Jesus the Messiah.

⁴⁷⁵ Schoeps states, 'The crucifixion of the Messiah was in truth His elevation, as was promised for Yahweh's servant in Is. 52:13, and it took place in order to do away the curse of the law by the realization of that curse: "for He became a curse for us"' (1961, 179). See also Hays 2000, 261.

In this regard, Matthew Harmon has recently conducted a comprehensive survey on the intertextual relationship between Isaiah and Galatians.⁴⁷⁶ His central thesis is: ‘while some have regarded this final section [Gal 4:21–5:1] as an afterthought, our contention is that Gal 4:21–5:1 function as *the climax of the argument* begun in Gal 3:1 towards which Paul has steadily been building’.⁴⁷⁷ He argues that the hermeneutical key of this passage lies in Paul’s citation of Isaiah 54:1, through which Paul re-reads Genesis 16–21 allegorically as well as eschatologically.⁴⁷⁸ Harmon maintains that Paul recognises the significance of Isaiah 54:1 within the context of Isaiah 51–54, which constitutes the core of Paul’s gospel.⁴⁷⁹ In Harmon’s view, Paul deploys a number of Isaianic allusions and echoes in his arguments in Galatians 3–4,⁴⁸⁰ which anticipate the climactic usage of Isaiah 54:1 in Galatians 4:27.⁴⁸¹

Harmon further maintains that Paul does not simply allude to a number of Isaianic texts in his argument. Rather, there exists a “shared narrative pattern” between Galatians 1–4 and Isaiah 40–66. His description of the “shared narrative” is, however, not without problems. He delineates this as follows:

A Servant is commissioned by God from before his birth to glorify the Lord through his ministry. The ministry consists of being a light to the nations so that the Lord’s salvation might reach to the ends of the earth...But before that salvation can become a reality, the curse must be lifted. So a Servant takes upon himself the curse so that the

⁴⁷⁶ Harmon 2010.

⁴⁷⁷ Ibid., 173 [my emphasis].

⁴⁷⁸ Ibid., 176–80.

⁴⁷⁹ Ibid., 183.

⁴⁸⁰ Harmon provides a comprehensive list of the passages in Galatians 3–4, where he detects Isaianic influence (Ibid., 186). While it is outside our aim to evaluate the Isaianic allusions and echoes he finds, it seems that some cases are questionable (e.g., the combination of Gal 3:6–9 with Isa 51:1–8).

⁴⁸¹ His view, however, has drawn some criticism. Ciampa states, ‘In my view, there is too much in the passage [Gal 4:21–5:1] that is clearly directly dependent on the Genesis text and to which Isaiah makes little or no necessary contribution’ (2012, 200).

promised blessings of salvation might flow to all who are identified with the Servant. As a result of the Servant's sacrificial and substitutionary death and vindication, the eschatological people of God was born as the long-promised descendants of Abraham who receive the promised inheritance.⁴⁸²

This description raises some critical questions. Setting aside for now the question of the narrative substructure of Galatians, we shall focus on whether his account of the narrative of Isaiah 40–66 is adequate.⁴⁸³ Harmon describes the mission of the servant as follows: 'The ministry consists of being a light to the nations so that the Lord's salvation might reach to the ends of the earth'. This statement is at best half-true. As we saw, the primary task of the ministry of the servant is the redemption and restoration of the survivors of Israel, although his ministry causes internal discord among the people of Israel. Bringing salvation to the nations is of course an important task of the servant, but this belongs to the second stage of the mission of the servant (cf. Isa 49:6). This point poses a further question. While Harmon presumably wishes to say that the servant bore the "curse" of both Jews and Gentiles,⁴⁸⁴ as far as the Isaianic text is concerned, it is difficult to make his case. From the narrative context of Isaiah 49–55, it is unambiguous that "my people" in 53:8 does not refer to the peoples of the nations, but to the people of Israel. In fact, in every extant text, this word does not refer to the "nations", as Ekblad explains, 'The LXX's τοῦ λαοῦ μου agrees with the MT and 1QIsa^b against the corrected 1QIsa^a עַמּוֹ ('his people')'.⁴⁸⁵ In the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55, the servant first redeems his people (i.e., Jews) from the curse of the covenant through bearing punishment on their behalf, and *then*

⁴⁸² Harmon 2010, 253.

⁴⁸³ As to the "narrative structure", see Hays 2002 [1983], 82-95; N. T. Wright 1992, 69-80.

⁴⁸⁴ Ibid., 190.

⁴⁸⁵ Ekblad 1999, 235.

he summons nations that do not know the God of Israel (cf. Isa 55:5). Although his ministry caused an internal dispute among his fellow Israelites, his primary focus was still the redemption of his people, through whom (presumably) he would accomplish the second stage of his mission, that is, to be a light to the nations (cf. Isa 49:6). Only through this two-tiered salvific process, does the prophet envisage the oneness of God's people, which consists of all the nations:

Isaiah 56:6–7: And the foreigners who join themselves to him, to minister to him, to love the name of the Lord, to be his servants, all who keep the Sabbath, and do not profane it, and hold fast my covenant – these I will bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer; their burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be accepted on my altar; for my house shall be called a house of prayer for all peoples (*πᾶσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν* in OG).

It is our contention that such a “two-tiered” salvific process can be observed in Galatians 2–4 as well. Paul contends that Christ redeemed those who are under the curse of the law (i.e., Jews), through whom the blessings of Abraham would be brought to Gentiles (Gal 3:13–14). This would result in the formation of one people of the God of Israel, made up of Jews and Gentiles (Gal 4:27; cf. 3:28). Our primary aim in this chapter is to delineate such a narrative substructure beneath Paul's arguments in Galatians 2–4. However, this exegetical enterprise has already been undertaken by several prominent scholars. Therefore, in the following, we shall turn our attention to their works.

2. Narrative reading of Galatians

2. 1 Introduction

The epistle to the Galatians has always attracted keen interest in Pauline scholarship. This letter, however, has received renewed interest in recent decades concerning its narrative element. It is the seminal work of Richard Hays, *The Faith of Jesus Christ: The Narrative Substructure of Galatians 3:1–4:11*,⁴⁸⁶ which redirects Pauline scholars to this line of investigation. In this section, we shall first examine the work of Hays, and then move to the studies of James Scott, Florentino García Martínez, and N. T. Wright.

What is to be discussed is not simply a literary review of these scholars' works. Rather, through engaging actively and critically with these scholars' exegeses, we shall establish our own reading of Galatians 2–4 in the Isaianic light.

2. 2 Richard B. Hays

2. 2. 1 Introduction

The dissertation of Hays, published in 1983, has exerted a critical influence on Pauline scholarship. In Hays' own words, the thrust of this work is: 'As we shall see through an examination of Gal 3:1–4:11, in certain key theological passages in his letters, the framework of Paul's thought is constituted neither by a system of doctrines nor by his personal religious

⁴⁸⁶ The first edition was published in 1983.

experience but by “a sacred story,” a narrative structure’.⁴⁸⁷ One of the central yet controversial exegetical claims in this work is that the phrase “the faith of Christ Jesus” (πίστεως Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ. Cf. Gal 2:16) is a catch-phrase that condenses and invokes the *story* of the life and the death of Jesus the Messiah.⁴⁸⁸ Since much has already been written about this study, we shall concentrate on a few exegetical points that are relevant to our research.

2. 2. 2 Galatians 3:13–14: The death of Christ, the Abrahamic promise, and the Spirit

First, Hays suggests a strong connection between Galatians 3:14 and Isaiah 44:3. This proposal is significant for our study, since Galatians 3:13 and 3:14 constitute a single passage on a syntactical level. If the theological background of Galatians 3:14 can be found in Deutero-Isaiah, the same could hold true for 3:13. Hays addresses one of the vexing exegetical problems posed by Galatians 3:14: a logical connection between the Abrahamic promise and the bestowal of the Spirit:

In Gal 3:14 it is clear that “the blessing of Abraham” is somehow equated with “the promise of the Spirit.” But how can Paul pose this equation? Nowhere in the OT does the promise to Abraham have anything to do with the Spirit. The content of the promise is clear: the land, descendants, and an eternal covenant. There is no reference to the *Spirit* at all. Yet Paul speaks of the presence of the Spirit as an obvious evidence that the promise is now fulfilled. Is this a purely arbitrary assertion?⁴⁸⁹

⁴⁸⁷ Hays 2002 [1983], 6.

⁴⁸⁸ Ibid., 8. In his commentary on Galatians, Hays succinctly explains this phrase as follows: ‘As v. 16 [Gal 2:16] suggests, this formulation does not originate with Paul; it is the common property of early Jewish Christianity. But what does it mean? The phrase “the faithfulness of Jesus Christ” makes sense only if we read it as an allusion to a *story* about Jesus, “who gave himself for our sins to set us free from the present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father (1:4)”’ (2000, 240 [Hays’ emphasis]). Concerning the scholarly debate on the phrase πίστις Χριστοῦ (“faith of Christ” or “faith in Christ”), see the dialogue between Hays himself and James D. G. Dunn. Hays 2002 [1983], 249-97.

⁴⁸⁹ Ibid., 181 [Hays’ italics].

On this point, Hays points out that there is an interesting similarity between Galatians 3:14 and Isaiah 44:3:

A partial answer might be found once again in Paul's use of scriptural testimonies concerning the messianic seed. The key text is Isa 44:3: ἐπιθήσω τὸ πνεῦμά μου ἐπὶ τὸ σπέρμα σου καὶ τὰς εὐλογίας μου ἐπὶ τὰ τέκνα σου. This promise is addressed, to be sure, not to Abraham but to "my servant Jacob and my beloved Israel whom I have chosen" (Isa 44:2). Nonetheless, the parallelism between this passage and Gal 3:14 is very striking, and the association of τὸ πνεῦμα and αἱ εὐλογίαι with τὸ σπέρμα might be of significance for understanding Paul's thinking.⁴⁹⁰

While Hays suggests a possible relation of Isaiah 44:3 with the Davidic messianic texts such as 2 Samuel 7:12–14,⁴⁹¹ we shall pursue a different line of interpretation.

It is noteworthy that Isaiah 44:1–3 seems to be closely related to the contents of Isaiah 49–55. Although Isaiah 44:3 is slightly remote from Isaiah 49–55, the thematic and linguistic connections between them are conspicuous:

Isaiah 44:1–3 (in OG): But now hear, O Iakob my servant and Israel whom I have chosen! Thus says the Lord God who made you and who formed you from the womb (ὁ ποιήσας σε καὶ ὁ πλάσας σε ἐκ κοιλίας): You will still be helped (Ἔτι βοηθηθήσῃ); do not fear, O Iakob my servant and the beloved Israel whom I have chosen, because I will provide water in their thirst to those who walk in a dry land; I will put my spirit on your offspring and my blessings on your children.

The exact phrase "who formed you from the womb" is repeated in the second servant poem (Isa 49:5), though the person is changed from second (σε) in 44:2 to first (με). The phrase "You will

⁴⁹⁰ Ibid., 182–3.

⁴⁹¹ Ibid. 183.

still be helped” also resonates with the phrase in 50:7 (κύριος βοηθός μου ἐγενήθη). From the surrounding context, the “servant” described in 44:1–2 seems to represent Israel in a collective sense (cp. Isa 43:10; 44:21). However, this figure can also be identified with the “servant” appearing in Isaiah 49–55, who confronts the formidable opposition within the nation of Israel. The “servant” depicted in 44:1–2 can be distinguishable from the “offspring” and “children” mentioned in 44:3. Their relationship is interestingly analogous with that between the suffering servant in chapter 53 and the “children” in 54:1. That is, the “servant” in 44:1–2 and chapter 53 is the agent who implements the will of God, while the “children” in 44:3 and 54:1 are the beneficiaries of God’s blessings. Admittedly, unlike the case of Isaiah 49–55, 44:1–3 does not talk about the “suffering” or “punishment” of the servant. However, the theme of “punishment” is present in Isaiah 44:1–3 as well. Morales points out the fact that 44:1–3 is preceded by God’s declaration of the punishment on Israel (cf. Isa 43:27–28): ‘the prophet describes the restoration that will follow Israel’s punishment’.⁴⁹² He also indicates the fact that the outpouring of the Spirit is connected to the end of the covenantal punishment in one of the documents found in the Dead Sea Scrolls, ‘The connection between the “blessings” and the “Spirit” [in 4Q504 5.15–16] most likely alludes to Isa 44,3, the only verse in the OT to connect these two terms. The *Words of the Luminaries* thus associates the gift of God’s Spirit with the restoration of Israel after its punishment for failure to keep the covenant’.⁴⁹³

In Isaiah 53–54, the servant suffers covenantal punishment in full, and then the promised blessings are to be realised to his σπέρμα (cf. Isa 53:10). Hence, the thematic tie between the servant in Isaiah 44:1–3 and the servant depicted in Isaiah 53 seems to be stronger than it

⁴⁹² Morales 2010, 22.

⁴⁹³ Morales 2009, 271-2.

initially appears. Considering these points together, although we do not have explicit evidence, it is possible to assume that first century exegetes such as Paul interpreted Isaiah 44:1–3 in conjunction with Isaiah 49–55.⁴⁹⁴ If Paul alludes to Isaiah 44:3 in Galatians 3:14, this further suggests that Paul could also have the larger Isaianic context, most probably Isaiah 53, in mind. In his commentary of Galatians, Hays conjectures this possibility:

How is this outcome dependent on Christ's redemption of *Israel* from Deuteronomy's curse? Paul does not explain the connection...but we can make some guesses. The prophetic text that most powerfully shapes Paul's vision of the eschatological inclusion of the Gentiles is the book of Isaiah. Isaiah holds forth the vision of God's final redemption and restoration of Israel as a prelude to the gathering of the Gentiles to worship the one true God on Mt. Zion (e.g., Isa 2:2–4; 60:1–22).⁴⁹⁵

We strongly support Hays' suggestion, and the following studies will bolster this point.

2. 2. 3 The shared narrative substructure in Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6

Second, Hays argues that a parallel relationship exists between Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6. While a number of commentators point out a way in which the two are related, there are other marked differences as well. Whilst 3:13 clearly refers to Christ's death, this event is completely absent in 4:4–5, as Hays states, 'The blessings of salvation are achieved, according to 3:13, through Christ's death on a cross, but 4:4–5 says nothing about his death'.⁴⁹⁶ If Galatians 4:4–5 has nothing to do with Christ's death, it is difficult to find a theological parallel between this passage and 3:13–14.

⁴⁹⁴ Blenkinsopp suggests this possibility (2006, 252).

⁴⁹⁵ Hays 2000, 261 [Hays' emphasis]. We shall fully discuss the relationship between Galatians 3:13 and Deuteronomy's curse in the next section.

⁴⁹⁶ Cf. Hays 2002 [1983], 78.

In this regard, Hays provides a fresh perspective. He suggests that Galatians 4:3–6 and 3:13–14 share the same *narrative substructure*, namely, Paul’s gospel story. The same story can be recounted from different angles, which produce different formulaic statements. He explains the absence of Christ’s death in 4:3–6 in this way: ‘We must remember that Paul is recapitulating the story by means of allusion, not narrating anew. His readers already know the story. Thus, Paul omits the performance syntagm [i.e., Christ’s becoming a curse]’.⁴⁹⁷ Moreover, Hays offers a unique solution to a vexing problem of identifying “we” and “you” in these passages. He considers this problem in the light of “narrative syntagms”,⁴⁹⁸ which demand the clarification of who/what the “Subject”, the “Object”, and the “Recievers” are within the narrative logic.⁴⁹⁹ He states that ‘we may note that in both formulations the Receivers appear in the following order: (1) Jews, (2) Gentiles, (3) “us” (Jews and Gentiles together). However, the two formulations tell the story from different points of view: in Gal 4:5 “we” means the Gentiles, whereas in 3:13 “us” means the Jews’.⁵⁰⁰ Hays concludes,

The analysis has shown that Paul has not artlessly spliced together contradictory christologies, that the two formulations do cohere fitly in the structure of the narrative model. Thus we can demonstrate that, even if these christological formulations have their origins in hypothetical pre-Pauline traditions, they are united, *at the level of Paul’s usage of them*, in a single story-structure.⁵⁰¹

Hays’ case is of great importance for our study, since it suggests that the various arguments

⁴⁹⁷ Ibid., 97.

⁴⁹⁸ There is no space space to expound this literary theory. See Hays’ own detailed account (Ibid., 82-95, esp. 85).

⁴⁹⁹ Ibid., 106-111.

⁵⁰⁰ Ibid., 107. We, however, disagree with his view. In our review of James Scott below, we shall contend that in both passages “we/us” almost always refer to Jews in general or Jewish Christians in particular.

⁵⁰¹ Ibid., 111 [Hays’ emphasis].

Paul offers in Galatians 3:1–5:1 may well be derived from the same story.

2. 2. 4 The word ἀκοή in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5

Third, Hays opens up the possibility that Paul's gospel in the epistle to the Galatians is deeply rooted in the gospel foretold by Deutero-Isaiah. He suggests that the word ἀκοή in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5 carries a strong Isaianic connotation. In order to understand his argument, it is vital to turn our attention to the opening verse of Isaiah 53:

Isaiah 53:1: κύριε, τίς ἐπίστευσεν τῇ ἀκοῇ ἡμῶν; καὶ ὁ βραχίων κυρίου τίνι ἀπεκαλύφθη;
(Lord, who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?)

The verse quoted above has verbal and thematic links to the preceding verse:

Isaiah 52:10: καὶ ἀποκαλύψει κύριος τὸν βραχίονα αὐτοῦ τὸν ἅγιον ἐνώπιον πάντων τῶν ἐθνῶν, καὶ ὄψονται πάντα τὰ ἄκρα τῆς γῆς τὴν σωτηρίαν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ.
(And the Lord shall reveal his holy arm before all the nations, and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation that comes from God)

The combination of the verb ἀποκαλύπτω and the noun βραχίων appears in both verses, which evinces the thematic linkage between the two. Hence, there should be a strong tie between τῇ ἀκοῇ ἡμῶν (our report) and τὴν σωτηρίαν (the salvation). This point is corroborated by the expression ἀκουστὴν ποιήσω τὴν σωτηρίαν σου (make your salvation reported) in the following verse:

Isaiah 52:7: ὡς ὥρα ἐπὶ τῶν ὀρέων, ὡς πόδες εὐαγγελιζόμενον ἀκοὴν εἰρήνης, ὡς εὐαγγελιζόμενος ἀγαθὰ, ὅτι ἀκουστὴν ποιήσω τὴν σωτηρίαν σου λέγων Σιών Βασιλεύσει

σου ὁ θεός.

(Like season on the mountains, like the feet of the one who proclaims the gospel of a report of peace, like the one who proclaims the gospel of good things, since I will make your salvation reported, speaking to Zion, “Your God will reign”: my translation)

In this verse, “the gospel of a report of peace” is used synonymously with “the salvation reported”. Taken together these linguistic and thematic linkages suggest that the word ἀκοή can be construed as the gospel itself. In fact, Paul takes the Isaianic gospel (εὐαγγέλιον) as the synonym for ἀκοή (cf. Rom 10:15–16). Hays argues that the term ἀκοή appearing in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5 is identical with the word Paul quotes from Isaiah 53:1 in Romans 10:16.⁵⁰² After considering other usages of πίστις, Hays concludes, ‘it is certainly possible to defend the translation of ἀκοή πίστεως in Gal 3:2, 5 as “the message of faith (=the gospel-message)”’.⁵⁰³ Although Hays’ claim for the linkage between the gospel/report of Isaiah 52–53 and the gospel/report of the epistle to the Galatians is a bit cautious, his argument that ἀκοή signifies the “message” rather than the “hearing” substantially supports this line of interpretation.⁵⁰⁴ If Hays’ argument is correct, in the light of the fact that Paul does not explain what the “message of faith(fullness)” (ἀκοῆς πίστεως in Gal 3:2) stands for, he must have presupposed that his addressees already knew what he means by this “message”. In other words, the “story of Jesus” Hays proposes as the “message” of the faithful one (Jesus) can be identical with the story of the Isaianic suffering servant who is faithful to his covenantal calling. This point suggests that Paul elaborated on the contents of Isaiah 49–55 during his stay in Galatia.

⁵⁰² Ibid., 128–31.

⁵⁰³ Ibid., 131.

⁵⁰⁴ Harmon insists that ἀκοή in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5 should denote a human action of “hearing”. However, this construction diminishes the force of his own argument that Paul here depends on Isaiah 53:1. Cf. Harmon 2010, 125–33.

2. 2. 5 Summary

In Hays' work we focused on three points, which are highly relevant to the purpose of our investigation. First, the theological background of Galatians 3:13–14 can be found in Isaiah 44:1–3, which seems to have a strong thematic link to Isaiah 53–54. Second, Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6 should be viewed as parallel passages, which share the same narrative substructure. Third, there is a possibility that Paul's gospel is fundamentally rooted in the gospel of Deutero-Isaiah. In what follows, then, we shall examine the scholars who expand and bolster the line of argument Hays initiated.

2. 3 James M. Scott

2. 3. 1 Introduction

Hays argues that Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6 are based on the same story, the story of Jesus Christ.⁵⁰⁵ James Scott moves this idea in a new direction, claiming that this story is also the story of Israel, which is implicitly articulated in Deuteronomy 27–32.⁵⁰⁶ According to Scott, the story of Jesus Christ is inseparably linked to that of Israel, since Jesus Christ is the protagonist of the story of Israel.⁵⁰⁷ He demonstrates this point in two of his works: his seminal thesis *Adoption as Sons of God*, and his article 'For as Many as are of Works of the Law are under a

⁵⁰⁵ Although Scott does not advocate a narrative reading of Galatians, his arguments virtually imply this. Scott maintains that the "new Exodus" is the crucial backbone of both Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:3–6. Since the theme of the Exodus unmistakably involves a narrative element, it is permissible to use the terms "narrative/story" in our review of Scott's works.

⁵⁰⁶ Cf. Scott 1993a, 645–7. Hays endorses Scott's "Deuteronomic" reading on Galatians 3:10–14, but he seems to remain sceptical about the "new Exodus" reading on 4:1–7 (2000, 256–62, 280–6).

⁵⁰⁷ Some influential scholars, such as J. Louis Martyn, strongly oppose this idea. Martyn states, 'Galatians shows us a Paul who does not accept "covenant" as a term indicating a fundamental building block of his theology...Neither does he present as his theology a form of *Heilsgeschichte* in which Christ is interpreted in line with Israel's history' (1991, 179).

Curse' (Galatians 3.10).⁵⁰⁸ One of the most crucial contributions of Scott's works is to highlight the particular historical situation of Israel, namely, the protracted exile.⁵⁰⁹

Scott's main concern lies in exploring the relationship of Galatians with the book of Deuteronomy 27–32, rather than with Deutero-Isaiah. Nonetheless, his study is important to our investigation, since the historical and theological background of Isaiah 49–55 is the exile of the people of Israel, which can be seen as the covenantal curse depicted in Deuteronomy 27–29. The role of the servant is to rescue the people in exile from their predicament, a rescue which eventually leads to the blessings to whole world. Hence, Scott's argument indirectly supports our contention that this Isaianic gospel is the gospel that Paul presents in Galatians.

A critical weakness of Scott's argument must be, however, while he maintains that Galatians 3:10 is about the protracted exile of *Jews* caused by the fracture of the Mosaic covenant, he insists that Galatians 3:13 and 4:3–7 alike concern the new Exodus of *both Jews and Gentiles* from the curse of the *Universal Law*. We contend that both 3:10–14 and 4:1–7 recount the same story, that is, the new Exodus of Jews from the Mosaic curse, which overlaps with the new Exodus of both Jews and Gentiles from the dominion of sin. With this point in mind, we first review Scott's discussion on Galatians 4:1–7.

2. 3. 2 Galatians 4:1–7: The new Exodus

An increasing number of Pauline scholars now argue that the new Exodus story underlies Paul's various arguments in the epistle to the Galatians.⁵¹⁰ While there may well be more allusions to

⁵⁰⁸ The former is published in 1992, and the latter in 1993b.

⁵⁰⁹ N. T. Wright also stresses the importance of this theme, and we shall see his argument in what follows.

⁵¹⁰ Cf. W. D. Davies 1967, 314-5; Scott 1992; Keesmaat 1999; Wilder 2001; Byron 2003; Wilson 2004.

the Exodus story in Galatians than there appear to be at first glance,⁵¹¹ Scott focuses on Galatians 4:1–7.⁵¹² He overturns the conventional understanding of Galatians 4:1–7 as being based on the Greco-Roman law of testamentary guardianship,⁵¹³ and claims instead that the crucial theological backdrop of this passage is the ancient Exodus story.

Indeed, long before Scott’s proposal, the conventional view had attracted some sharp criticism, such as: (1) In Roman law, the existence of a guardian presupposes that the father of an heir has already died, as ‘the Roman practice was that a fatherless boy was under the *tutor* until fourteen but he remained under a *curator* much longer, usually until twenty-five’.⁵¹⁴ The custodian of property continues to manage the inheritance entrusted to him, until the minor/heir reaches the appointed age. Paul allegedly refers to this legal arrangement in 4:1–2. However, in 4:3–7, the father is still alive when “minors” reach the appointed age, and he dispatches his “son/heir” in order to make the inheritance available to other “sons”. Hence, from a Roman juristic point of view, it is extremely difficult to find any logical connection between 4:1–2 and 3–7. (2) In Greco-Roman law, even if “minors” of a citizen are in the custody of guardians, it is an exaggeration to call them “slaves”. This is because sons of a free citizen are by nature free

⁵¹¹ Wilson maintains, ‘Several leading motifs and a variety of imagery and language arguably stem from the Exodus (e.g. redemption, slavery and freedom, adoption as “sons”, inheritance of the promises to Abraham, new creation). More importantly, a close reading of the flow of Paul’s argument reveals striking parallels with the narrative sequence of the Exodus story: promises to Abraham > redemption from slavery > adoption as “sons” > heirs of the promise > inheritance of the kingdom (cf. 3.6–29; 4.1–7; 5.21). So despite a lack of explicit citations from the books of Exodus–Numbers, the narrative traditions surrounding the Exodus still seem to have had a paradigmatic influence over what Paul says in Galatians’ (*Op. cit.*, 551).

⁵¹² Hafemann describes Scott’s exegesis on Galatians 4:1–7 as ‘a turning point in the exegesis of the argument’ (1997, 334, n.12).

⁵¹³ See, e.g., Barrett 1976, 8. It is important to note that Roman law and Greek law are fundamentally different from each other in some critical points. Cf. Moore-Crispin 1989.

⁵¹⁴ Witherington 1998, 282. He goes on to argue, ‘Paul here seems to envision the death of the father and the appointment in a will of guardians and trustees, a normal Greek procedure’ (*Ibid.*, 283).

citizens, even though their access to the property/inheritance is restricted in their adolescence.⁵¹⁵

They do not become “free” through “adoption” only after reaching the appointed age.⁵¹⁶ In

addition to these points, Scott marshals several lines of linguistic evidence that support his contention,⁵¹⁷ and claims that we should seek the theological backdrop of Galatians 4:1–2 in the

Exodus story.⁵¹⁸ He contends that the term *νήπιος* alludes to the Exodus:

In the rest of the Corpus Paulinum, *νήπιος* occurs in an ethical and spiritual sense of those needing instruction and moral development (cf. Rom. 2:20; 1Cor. 3:1; 13:11; Eph. 4:14), but never in a legal sense such as “minor.” More probably, *νήπιος* alludes here to Hos. 11:1, where, in a unique way in the Septuagint, the term refers to Israel as “young” at the time of the Exodus when God called Israel out of Egypt as his “son.”...Hence *νήπιος* in Gal. 4:1 might well allude to Hos. 11:1, in order to recall both the traditional divine sonship imagery connected with the Exodus (cf. Ex. 4:22; Deut. 1:13, 14:1; Isa. 63:16; Wisd. 18:13; mAbot 3:14 [citing Deut. 14:1]) and the temporal nature of being *νήπιος*.⁵¹⁹

Scott stresses that we should not overlook the logical link between 3:15–29 and 4:1–7, forged

by the key term *κληρονόμος*. God promised to Jacob, the legitimate heir of Abraham, as follows:

⁵¹⁵ Moore-Crispin explains, ‘in complete contrast to the status of those under Romans *patria potestas*, Greek sons (and sometimes daughters) had rights over family property even in the lifetime of their parents’ (1989, 219).

⁵¹⁶ Scott 1992, 123–5. See also Hafemann 1997, 334; Byron 2003, 182–5.

⁵¹⁷ Scott makes another five points that bolster his contention: 1) Evidence which indicates that the word *ἐπίτροπος* was used not only in a Greco-Roman legal context but also in a Palestinian Jewish law of guardianship. 2) Scholars often fail to recognise a potential link between Gal 3:29 and 4:1 in terms of the word *κληρονόμος* (i.e., “the seed of Abraham”). 3) Although the phrase *κύριος πάντων* is too often construed as referring to the “(potential) owner of all (of patrimony)”, it would be more pertinent to understand it as the universal sovereignty promised to the patriarchs. 4) The juxtaposition of *ἐπίτροποι* with *οἰκονόμοι* makes it improbable that the former denotes “guardians”, since the latter does ‘not fit the picture of Greco-Roman guardianship’ (ibid., 136). 5) Although many scholars construe *προθέσμιος* as referring to ‘the date set by the father for the termination of the guardianship’, there is virtually no linguistic evidence to support this interpretation. Cf. Ibid., 126–45. The criticisms against these points, see esp. Goodrich 2010.

⁵¹⁸ Ibid., 145–6.

⁵¹⁹ Ibid., 129–30.

“and your offspring shall be like the dust of the earth, and you shall spread abroad to the west and to the east and to the north and to the south; and all the families of the earth shall be blessed in you and in your offspring” (Gen 28:14). In the Second Temple era, this passage was often interpreted as referring to the promise of inheriting the whole world.⁵²⁰ Hence, at the time of Paul, it would not have been strange to call the heir of Abraham “the lord of all things” (κύριος πάντων; cf. Rom 4:13).

Likewise, it is no exaggeration to call the ancient Israelites in Egypt “slaves”, as Scott states, ‘From the time of the Old Testament on, Israel viewed its 400/430-year sojourn in Egypt as a period of enslavement. This was already seen above from the use of δουλοῦν in Gen. 15:13 itself’.⁵²¹ Keesmaat also indicates, ‘Almost half of the occurrences of δουλεία in the LXX are in this [Exodus] context’.⁵²² Hence, it is indeed possible to detect an echo of the Abrahamic/Exodus story in 4:1–2. Scott thus contends: ‘God is seen as Father in Gal. 4:2 under the influence of Hos. 11:1, to which νήπιος alludes in v.1. According to the imagery of Hos. 11:1, God called Israel as his son out of Egypt at the Exodus. This is what Rom. 9:4 calls the υἱοθεσία of the Israelites, the divine “adoption as sons” which the people of God received at the Exodus from Egypt’.⁵²³

Having expounded 4:1–2, Scott goes on to argue that the relationship of 4:1–2 to 4:3–7 is that of *type* (First Exodus) to *antitype* (Second Exodus). Given the unity of Galatians 4:1–7 ‘in which vv. 1–2 comprise the so-called “illustration”, and vv. 3–7, the “application” introduced

⁵²⁰ Ibid., 134–5. See *Jub.* 32:19; Sir 44:19–23.

⁵²¹ Ibid., 143. Cf. Exod 20:2–3.

⁵²² Keesmaat 1999, 67.

⁵²³ Scott, *ibid.*, 148.

by οὕτως καὶ ἡμεῖς',⁵²⁴ it is reasonable to assume that the discourse proceeds to a “new Exodus”.

Scott states:

As such, τὸ πλήρωμα τοῦ χρόνου stands in parallel to ἡ προθεσμία τοῦ πατρός (v. 2), the time which God had foreordained to Abraham as the time when Israel would be delivered from bondage in Egypt. If the latter comes at the end of a predetermined 400/430-years period of time, the typology of the passage raises the interesting question of whether “the fullness of time” comes at the end of a similar period of time.⁵²⁵

The question Scott raises here is an intriguing one. According to Josephus, a speculative chronological calculation concerning the arrival of the Messiah was wide-spread among first century Jews.⁵²⁶ Whatever was meant by “the fullness of time”, Paul must have believed that the arrival of Jesus the Messiah is God’s foreordained event, as the first Exodus was.

In his exegesis of 4:3–7, Scott insists that those who were ὑπὸ τὰ στοιχεῖα τοῦ κόσμου in 4:3 and “those who were under the law (ὑπὸ νόμον)” in 4:5 are identical, and refer to both Jews and Gentiles. In Scott’s view, Paul considers that all humanity is, irrespective of covenantal status, born “under the law”. Paul also believes that all mankind are under the “curse” of the law as a result of their sins. (Although we do not concur with these points, for now we shall leave them open.) Scott goes on to argue:

A passage like Isa. 43:1–7, which looks forward to the redemption of Israel (v. 1) as the sons and daughters of God (v. 6) in the Second Exodus, probably contributed to the 2 Sam. 7:14 tradition, as Hos. 2:1 obviously did in Jub. 1:25. Moreover, the 2 Sam. 7:14 tradition connects the divine adoption of Israel with the reception of the Spirit in the

⁵²⁴ Scott 1992, 121.

⁵²⁵ Ibid., 162.

⁵²⁶ Cf. *J. W.* 4:388; 6:109, 312-3, *Ant.* 10.267, 276. Beckwith 2005, 142-3; N. T. Wright 1992, 312-20; Grabbe 1997, 604-5.

heart (cf. Jub. 1:23; TJud. 24:3), just as in Gal 4:5–6. Particularly important is the fact that Gal. 4:4–5 brings the adopted sons of God into relation with the messianic Son of God, just as in the 2 Sam. 7:14 tradition.⁵²⁷

Scott concludes that the ultimate goal of the “new Exodus”, through which those who were under the curse of the law are to be rescued, is to grant the divine “adoption” (*υιοθεσία*) to them, as the ancient Israelites were adopted as sons of God after the first Exodus event.

2. 3. 3 Criticism against the “Exodus” reading

Scott’s proposal attracts criticism from some scholars. John Goodrich points out three weaknesses in Scott’s argument: (1) There is virtually no linguistic connection between Galatians 4:1–7 and the Exodus narrative. (2) Paul’s use of the present tense in Galatians 4:1–2 makes it difficult to find any historical allusion in this passage. (3) In Paul’s understanding, the Exodus event was not a way to freedom, but the road to the enslavement to the Mosaic law.⁵²⁸

Among Goodrich’s three points, the second point would be the most formidable one. It is more plausible that Paul here delineates a general principle rather than a specific historical event. Hence, Scott’s claim that Galatians 4:1–2 refers to the Exodus from Egypt is not entirely convincing. Rather, the argument of Scott Hafemann seems to hit the mark better: ‘Paul is here viewing Israel’s period of childhood/slavery as an interpretive principle representing whatever

⁵²⁷ Ibid., 178-9. By the term “2 Sam. 7:14 tradition”, Scott means: ‘Subsequent Jewish tradition takes up the Adoption Formula of 2 Sam. 7:14 and applies it eschatologically either to the Messiah (4QFlor. 1:11), to Israel (Jub. 1:24), or to both (TJud. 24:3)...it is plausible that early Jewish tradition would read the promise of a new covenant in Isa. 55:3 in light of the promise in Hos. 2:1 to reestablish Israel’s broken covenant relationship, including their divine sonship, and, from there, apply the messianically-interpreted Adoption Formula of 2 Sam. 7:14 to all Israel of the Restoration’ (Ibid., 104-5). It is also worth noting that 2 Samuel 7:14 was associated with Genesis 49:10 as a messianic text: ‘The messianic interpretation of “your offspring” in 2Sam. 7:12ff. goes back to pre-Christian Judaism, see “Florilegium” from Qumran (4QFlor 1.10–11). A paraphrase of Gen. 49:10 combines this text with 2Sam. 7:10 (4QPatrB1)’. Dahl 1977, 130, n.12.

⁵²⁸ Goodrich, 2010, 255-7.

period of time is contextually in view'.⁵²⁹ It is clear that Paul sees not simply their sojourn in Egypt, but the whole period of the history of Israel as the period of slavery (cf. Gal 3:23–24).

Goodrich's third point is, however, not persuasive. Paul, along with his Jewish contemporaries, would have clearly distinguished the significance of the Exodus event itself as God's act of deliverance from the subsequent history of Israel characterised by their continual rebellion against God. That is to say, even if the people of Israel quickly and repeatedly fell prey to the bondage of sin, the Exodus event must have remained as the symbol of the way to freedom, which would have been implanted in the hearts of Jews through the celebration of the annual Passover feast. Hence, given that the theme of "freedom" plays an important role in this epistle (Gal 5:1), it is plausible that the Exodus story underlies Paul's discourse from 4:1 onwards. As Scott argues, there is a strong thematic as well as linguistic parallel between Galatians 4:4–7 and Romans 8:14–17.⁵³⁰ If, as Keesmaat contends, the Exodus story underlies Romans 8:14–17, the same would hold true for Galatians 4:1–7.⁵³¹ Indeed, the "Exodus" reading of this passage fits in well with the following passage (Gal 4:8–11). Wilson discusses that the motif of "wanting" to turn back to the state of slavery in 4:9 is reminiscent of the Israelites' wilderness experience in the Exodus narrative, to which Paul refers in 1 Corinthians 10.⁵³² We must explore this point further.

In the Exodus narrative, the Israelites in Egypt were in the state of slavery (Exod 20:2–3). Likewise, the Galatians in a pre-conversion state is described as being "enslaved to beings that by nature are not gods" (Gal 4:8). In the subsequent Exodus narrative, the Israelites in the

⁵²⁹ Hafemann 1997, 337.

⁵³⁰ Cf. Scott 1992, 244–52.

⁵³¹ Keesmaat 1999, 54–96.

⁵³² Wilson 2004, 561–2.

wilderness often grumbled: “would it not be better for us to *go back to Egypt*?” (Num 14:3). This was not simply a matter of grumbling, however. Rather, it was a rebellion against the God of Israel, since they implicitly chose Pharaoh as their lord. In the case of the Galatians, however, the issue is not about whether to return to idolatrous whorship of pagan idols, but to start observing the Mosaic law. Does Paul, then, equate the Mosaic law (τὰ στοιχεῖα τοῦ κόσμου; Gal 4:3, 9)⁵³³ with τοῖς φύσει μὴ οὖσιν θεοῖς (Gal 4:8), which presumably signify pagan idols? It is not necessarily the case. Instead, it seems that Paul insists that the ex-pagan Galatians now participate in the renewed covenant of Israel, and hence share the history of Israel as well (cf. 1Cor 10:1). Therefore, if the Galatians *return* to the Mosaic law, this signifies that they run counter to the salvation history of Israel that God is now leading through Christ and the Spirit. Hence, this move is tantamount to the rebellion of the Israelites in the wilderness, who attempted to run counter God’s salvific move conducted through Moses.

If this reading of Galatians 4:8–11 can be maintained, this dovetails with the “Exodus” reading of Galatians 4:1–7. Paul seems to presume that the Galatian Christians are wandering in the symbolic world of “wilderness”, through which they are advancing to the promised heritage of the whole world.

2. 3. 4 Galatians 3:10

(i) Problems of the traditional interpretation

⁵³³ The exact meaning of στοιχεῖα is a matter of scholarly debate. This term normally refers to material constituents of the cosmos. In the light of 4:5, however, it is more likely that this refers to the Mosaic law that was caught up in the power of sin (cf. Gal 3:22). Cf. Delling, “στοιχεῖον,” *TDNT* 7:670-87.

Galatians 3:10–14 is arguably one of the most controversial passages in the New Testament. Each verse has sparked furious exegetical and theological debate. In this passage, Scott focuses on Paul’s use of Deuteronomy 27:26 in 3:10, which sheds crucial light on the meaning of the whole passage. His study on Galatians 3:10 is interesting for another reason. His exegesis on this verse leads us to an understanding that seems to contradict his reading of Galatians 4:5, not least of the phrase ὑπὸ νόμον, which we reviewed above. We shall return to this point in due course.

In 3:10, Paul appears to warn that anyone who attempts to obey the whole law will be cursed (cf. Gal 5:3–4), although Deuteronomy 27:26, which Paul quotes here, ‘pronounces a curse on the person who does not continually follow the requirements of Torah’.⁵³⁴ How can Paul make such a claim? It seems that Paul implicitly suggests that the Mosaic covenant does not provide sacrificial remedies to those who break the law. That is to say, since there is no sacrificial remedy, even a single breach of the law inevitably leads anyone who tries to do the whole law into the curse of the law. Thus, Westerholm assumes Paul’s implicit presupposition as follows: ‘100 percent fulfillment is needed if one is to be found righteous’.⁵³⁵ Schoeps also reconstructs an implicit premise that underlies Paul’s argument: ‘His implied meaning, that no man can fulfil the law, is really intended to suggest the *whole* law in its 613 commands and prohibitions. It is for this reason the curse of the law strikes every man, for –see Eccl. 7:13– the complete observance of the law among men, i.e., among sinners, does not exist’.⁵³⁶ Any attempt to obey the law is doomed to failure, because there is no way of compensating a breach

⁵³⁴ C. D. Stanley 2008, 150.

⁵³⁵ Westerholm 2004, 375, n.66

⁵³⁶ Schoeps 1961, 176–7 [Schoeps’ emphasis]. See also Morris 1955, 53; Bultmann 1952, 263.

of the law. Hence, even a single breach of the law incurs the curse of the law.⁵³⁷

If this is what Paul had meant, however, his opponents could have immediately pointed out the logical flaw of Paul's scriptural argument, since the Jewish scriptures do not demand *sinless perfectionism* from those who observe the law. On the contrary, the Mosaic law presupposes human frailty, as Hays argues:

This is such a ridiculous caricature of Judaism, however, that it could hardly have been taken seriously as a persuasive argument in Paul's time. If Paul had made such claims, the rival Missionaries could easily have refuted him by pointing out that the Law makes ample provision for forgiveness of transgressions through repentance, through the sacrificial system, and through the solemn annual celebration of the Day of Atonement.⁵³⁸

As our study of Yom Kippur for first century Jews showed,⁵³⁹ at least some pious Jews in this period, who humbly acknowledged their failure to obey all the commandments, firmly believed that God graciously forgave their imperfectness through Yom Kippur.⁵⁴⁰ Hence, if Paul had made such an assertion without explaining why even the slightest breach of the law results in the covenantal curse despite the availability of the ample remediable procedures, his opponents could have censured Paul for distorting the scriptures. In such a case, Paul's already threatened

⁵³⁷ Admittedly, this way of reading had already emerged in the second century CE. Cf. Justin, *Dialogue with Trypho* 95.

⁵³⁸ Hays 2000, 257. E. P. Sanders states, 'No rabbi took the position that obedience must be perfect. Pharisees and rabbis of all schools and all periods strongly believed in repentance and other means of atonement in the case of transgression' (1983, 28). Moreover, Wisdom comments on Josephus' statement in *Ant.* 4.311-313 as follows: 'Josephus writes that it is improper worship of the Lord which results in the curse, not the violation of one of the individual commandments in the law' (2001, 119).

⁵³⁹ See chapter 2,3.2.1-3.

⁵⁴⁰ This does not mean that there was no Jew who felt confident in, even boasted of, the total obedience to the law in the first century CE. Judaism at that time was a diversified entity, and there would have been some Jews who had such mentality (cf. Phil 3:6). But even these Jews would still have believed in the efficacy of sacrifice that compensated their shortcomings. Moreover, what must be stressed here is that the Jewish scriptures do not demand perfectionism concerning the law (i.e., leaving no margin for error).

credibility and authority would have been totally ruined by his rivals. Schoeps provides a harsh comment on Paul's alleged scriptural argument: 'It is clear that in the heat of the contest Paul had allowed himself to be driven to make assertions which on calmer reflection he could hardly have maintained seriously, if only to run the risk of ridicule'.⁵⁴¹ We cannot discount the possibility that there could be, among Paul's rival mission, some Jews who took Paul's argument as Schoeps takes it. Indeed, if anyone who attempts to fulfil the law falls automatically into the curse of the law, it raises a question of why God granted the law to Israel. It may suggest an embarrassing conclusion that God gave Israel the law in order to curse them, though Paul would have firmly rejected such a view. We should also be careful not to assume anachronistically that Paul exerted an unchallengeable authority over his congregations (cf. 2Cor 3:1; 10:10; 13:3). Rather, given Paul's shaky situation in the Galatian crisis, he must have provided biblically solid reasoning why those who are of the works of the law are under a curse.

(ii) Subjection to the gentile power as a sign of the covenantal curse

A more plausible case is that Paul herein resorts to a common awareness among Jews, which even his rivals were forced to concede.⁵⁴² From the political point of view, it was undeniable that Jews were in a state of "slavery" (cf. Gal 4:25).⁵⁴³ According to Josephus, Herod Agrippa II exclaimed to the riotous Judeans that they were actually "slaves":

Passing to your present passion for liberty, I say that it comes too late. The time is past when you ought to have striven never to lose it. For servitude is a painful experience (ἡ

⁵⁴¹ Schoeps 1961, 183.

⁵⁴² This is the point made by N. T. Wright (1991, 147).

⁵⁴³ Thielman 1989, 65-72; 1994, 127;

γὰρ πείρα τῆς δουλείας χαλεπή) and a struggle to avoid it once for all is just; but the man who having once accepted the yoke then tries to cast it off is a contumacious slave (αὐθάδης δοῦλός ἐστιν), not a lover of liberty.⁵⁴⁴

From the theological perspective, this miserable situation should be attributable to the Mosaic covenantal “curse”. The Jewish scriptures manifestly state that Israel’s subjugation to a foreign power is a clear sign of the covenantal curse, as Deuteronomy states:

Deuteronomy 28:15: *But if you will not obey the Lord your God by diligently observing all his commandments and decrees, which I am commanding you today, then all these curses shall come upon you and overtake you.*

Deuteronomy 28:25: *The Lord will cause you to be defeated before your enemies; you shall go out against them one way and flee before them seven ways. You shall become an object of horror to all the kingdoms of the earth.*⁵⁴⁵

For those first century Jews who were familiar with the scriptures, ‘[t]he presence of foreign dominion unambiguously signifies that the covenantal curses are “clinging” to the people as God’s punishment for their refusal to repent’.⁵⁴⁶

There is some evidence to suggest that Paul thinks his Jewish contemporaries have been under the covenantal curse as the result of the fracture of the covenant. First, in 1 Thessalonians 2:15–16, Paul describes ‘the death of Jesus as the culmination of Israel’s rejection of the prophets’.⁵⁴⁷ In other words, Paul sees that even before Jews’ rejection of Jesus, they have continually been invoking God’s wrath by rejecting his prophets. Second, Paul’s harsh denouncement of the Jews of his day in Romans 2:17–25 strongly suggests that Paul, in line

⁵⁴⁴ Josephus, *J.W.* 2.355–356. See particularly Kahl 2004, 229-3.

⁵⁴⁵ Cf. Deut 28:48; Judg 2:14; 6:1–2; 10:6–9; Ezra 9:7

⁵⁴⁶ Werline 1998, 161. Cf. Lev 26:40.

⁵⁴⁷ Scott 1993a, 651.

with OT prophets such as Jeremiah, asserts that the Jews as a nation have broken the covenant. Timothy Berkley points out, ‘The most important *vocabulary correspondence* has to do with the triad of charges against the Jew in Rom 2:21–22 of stealing (κλέπτειν), committing adultery (μοιχεύειν), and temple robbery (ἱεροσυλεῖν). They are paralleled in the list of indictments in Jer 7:8–11’.⁵⁴⁸ He further argues, ‘[Paul’s] point is that the efficacy of that mark of the covenant for salvation from wrath is lost if the covenant is not kept’.⁵⁴⁹ As Jeremiah contended that God’s covenant people could not simply rely on the symbol of the covenant, the Temple, which they profaned (cf. Jer 7:1–34), so Paul claims that Jews cannot rely on the mark of the covenant, the circumcision, which they nullify (Rom 2:25). On this point, Paul most probably alludes to the theme of the “circumcision of the heart” in the book of Deuteronomy.⁵⁵⁰ This theme only appears twice in the book of Deuteronomy (Deut 10:16; 30:6; cf. Jer 4:4; 9:25). Notably, in the latter instance, it is said that God himself will circumcise the heart of his people at the time of the great restoration of Israel. This conversely suggests that until the realisation of the circumcision of the heart, Israel must have been kept under the covenantal curse (cf. 2Cor 3:15). It is remarkable that Paul here quotes from Isaiah 52:5, where Deutero-Isaiah recapitulates the “history of Israel’s subjection” to gentile nations (Rom 2:24).⁵⁵¹ Paul suggests that this history of subjection still continues down to the present time.

⁵⁴⁸ Berkley 2000, 82-3. See also Josephus’ accusation against his Jewish contemporaries (*J.W.* 5.401-2), which shows a marked similarity Paul’s one in Romans 2:21-24.

⁵⁴⁹ *Ibid.*, 145-6.

⁵⁵⁰ Cf. *Ibid.*, 140, 148-9. As to the importance of Deuteronomy in Paul’s discourse, see, e.g., Scott 1993a, 645.

⁵⁵¹ See Blenkinsopp 2002, 341. Here, Deutero-Isaiah refers to Egypt, Assyria, and implicitly Babylon.

(iii) Scott's interpretation on Galatians 3:10

Scott argues that Paul's shared awareness with his Jewish contemporaries that the covenant has been fractured is the basis of Paul's assertion on Galatians 3:10. There is evidence that the negative assessment of the covenant status was held by at least some Jews who considered that the repentance of Jews as a nation was not deep enough. He points out that the penitential prayer in Daniel 9 is predicated on the Deuteronomic historical perspective, that is, all Israel are under the "curse" of the law.⁵⁵² The wide circulation of this type of penitential prayer among first century Jews suggests that this Deuteronomic perception of history was deeply ingrained in people's hearts.⁵⁵³

Although there are many other prayers like Dan. 9.4–14 in the Second Temple period which could be adduced here, the foregoing examples suffice to make the point. There is a widespread penitential prayer tradition based on Daniel 9 which recognizes that the curse of exile warned about in Deuteronomy 27–32 for violating the covenant has indeed come upon Israel as of 587 BCE, and that the condition of exile would persist until God, in accordance with his own mercy and timetable, would listen to Israel's confession of sin and bring in the restoration as Deuteronomy 27–32 had promised.⁵⁵⁴

The Danielic idea of prolonged exile appears to have its roots in the book of Deuteronomy itself.

This book stresses the perdurance of the covenantal curse: "If you do not diligently observe all

⁵⁵² Scott 1993b, 198-9.

⁵⁵³ See our discussion in chapter 4, 2.6. This is especially true for the Qumran community. Werline comments, 'Even though they are daily prayers, the Qumran community believes that the Jews are in crisis. The nation's sin has brought God's judgment and the Jews are living in the last days. Therefore, while penitential prayer is a daily activity, it is also part of life in the "age of wrath" that leads to the eschaton' (1998, 194).

⁵⁵⁴ Scott 1993b, 205-6. Cf. Ackroyd 1968, 242. The theology of "prolonged exile" can be observed in the *Damascus Document* (CD). As to CD I. 5–6, Knibb comments: 'The first is that in contrast to Ezekiel [4:5] the three hundred and ninety years refer to the exile of the southern kingdom, not the northern. That is to say, we have here a reinterpretation of the length of the exile on a par with Daniel's reinterpretation of the seventy years' (2009, 201).

the words of this law that are written in this book, fearing this glorious and awesome name, the Lord your God, then the Lord will overwhelm both you and *your offspring* with severe and *lasting* afflictions and grievous and *lasting* maladies” (Deut 28:58–59). Paul probably amalgamates this passage with Deuteronomy 27:26 in Galatians 3:10.⁵⁵⁵ He might be creating a summative effect through multiplying the covenantal oath of “twelve curses” (Deut 27:15–26) by the oracle of the “lasting” curses (Deut 28:58–59), all of which would serve to remind his Galatian audience of the real peril of becoming partakers of the Mosaic covenantal curses.

It is also vital to note that in the Jewish scriptures the divine covenantal wrath is primarily poured out collectively rather than individually.⁵⁵⁶ Although some scholars attempt to discount the significance of this aspect in Paul’s argument,⁵⁵⁷ this is exactly the pattern that frequently appears in the Jewish scriptures. Kaminsky emphasises this point by referring to the actual case of “exile”:

The notion of sin being stored up over numerous generations and finally being released in a disproportionate manner upon the sinner, or the generation, that finally pushes God beyond his limit, is one that was discussed at length in the previous chapter. The whole notion of transgenerational punishment presumes that God can and often does store up sin in this fashion. The clear evidence for the existence of this principle can be found in the reaction to the respective Northern and Southern exiles. The deuteronomistic history portrays the generation that received such punishment as guilty, but it also stresses the notion that the punishment has been accumulating for a long period of time.⁵⁵⁸

⁵⁵⁵ Cf. C. D. Stanley 1992, 238–43.

⁵⁵⁶ Hays rightly stresses this point (2000, 258).

⁵⁵⁷ E.g., Schreiner 1993, 49–50.

⁵⁵⁸ Kaminsky 1995, 59. He further comments, ‘Each of these passages [Deut 4:23–26; 29:23–27; 2Kgs 17:14–18; 2Kgs 22:17] speaks rather directly about the ability of Israel to misbehave and thus transgress God’s covenant, and by doing so to stir up divine wrath. Once this divine wrath reaches a critical point, it is poured out upon the nation in the form of the covenantal curses that eventuate in the exile of the nation’ (Ibid., 61). See also Gen 15:16.

Paul unmistakably grasps the aspect of sin as “something being stored up” (cf. Rom 2:1–11; 12:19–21, 1Thess 2:16), which suggests that he is fully aware of the *durative* and *collective* aspect of the covenantal curse resulting from the outburst of divine wrath (cf. Deut 29:27–28).

The cumulative force of these points indicates that the aim of Paul’s quotation from Deuteronomy 27:26 is to hammer home that those who wish to bind themselves to the Mosaic covenant are inevitably destined to be under the ongoing covenantal curse.⁵⁵⁹ As Francis Watson comments, ‘The Pauline claim that “those who are of works of the law are under a curse” (Gal. 3.10) derives not from the assumption that the law requires an impossible sinless observance, but from the deuteronomic interpretation of Israel’s history’.⁵⁶⁰ With this line of understanding of the “curse”, Scott concludes:

With Daniel, Paul had at his disposal a tremendous scriptural advantage when he appealed to his Gentile addressees in Galatia to consider the means by which they received the Spirit (Gal. 3:1–5). He could evidently assume that his addressees knew and accepted Daniel 9 and the related Old Testament/Jewish traditions. He could therefore confidently posit in Gal 3.10 that the threatened curse of Deut. 27.26 had not only come upon Israel historically but also that it continued to abide on the people to his day. To the question, ‘Did you receive the Spirit by works of the law, or by hearing of faith?’ (Gal. 3.2, cf. v. 5), Paul was answering in effect that the former possibility is completely ruled out on the basis of Old Testament/Jewish tradition: the law did not bring the Spirit, but rather a long-term curse on Israel.⁵⁶¹

Hence, those “under a curse” denotes the specific group whose identity is defined by the Mosaic law. Paul’s usage of “curse” and “blessing” terminology is in this respect akin to that in the *Rule*

⁵⁵⁹ We shall further defend this point in the next section.

⁵⁶⁰ Watson 2004, 433.

⁵⁶¹ Scott 1993b, 214–5.

of *Community*, as Werline explains, ‘This is an important transformation in the blessing–curse formula. Previously, as Nitzan argues, both blessings and curses applied to the same people and corresponded to this one group’s behavior. Now at Qumran, however, the inside group receives the blessings while it reserves the curses for the outsiders’.⁵⁶² Likewise, Paul pronounces the “blessings” of Abraham exclusively for one group who are “in Christ” (Gal 3:9, 14), and the “curses” for those who are ἐξ ἔργων νόμου, or ὑπὸ νόμον (Gal 3:10, 13; 4:4).⁵⁶³

We find Scott’s argument on Galatians 3:10 convincing. His argument on this verse poses, however, a question as to his exegesis on Galatians 4:5, which we studied above. Scott maintains that the “curse” of the law mentioned in 3:10 befalls Jews under the Mosaic covenant. He, however, asserts that Paul in 3:13 insists that Jesus redeemed from the “curse” not only Jews but also Gentile Christians who, before their conversion, had never observed the Mosaic law.⁵⁶⁴ Scott’s argument suggests that while Paul in 3:10 exclusively refers to the plight of Jews under the Mosaic covenant, he suddenly changes to another topic of the human plight under the Universal Law in 3:13.

According to Scott, Paul believes that the curse of the law is applicable to all humankind, irrespective of the observance of the Mosaic law, ‘The expression οἱ ὑπὸ νόμον in v. [4:]5a recalls the curse which the law pronounces upon mankind as a result of sin’.⁵⁶⁵ Scott further insists, ‘Paul teaches elsewhere that the law condemns both Jews and Gentiles (cf. Rom.

⁵⁶² Werline 1998, 136. Nitzan further explains, ‘Here [1QS 2.1–18], unlike the Bible, we no longer find a group of blessings posed against a group of curses, both of which are addressed to the same people. Instead, there is one group of blessings invoked upon those who enter into the covenant and undertake to observe it, and against it there are two groups of curses: first to those who do not enter the covenant, and second to those who have entered the covenant, but intentionally violated their commitment’ (1994, 126).

⁵⁶³ As to the significance of the contrast between “blessing” and “curse” in Galatians as a whole, see esp., Wilson 2007. See also Lee 2013, 32.

⁵⁶⁴ Scott 1992, 156.

⁵⁶⁵ Ibid., 174.

3:9–20) and thus confines them (Gal. 3:23).⁵⁶⁶ Since this issue is critically important to our study, we shall now evaluate the plausibility of Scott’s understanding of the phrase ὑπὸ νόμον in Galatians 4:5.

2. 3. 4 Critical assessment of Scott’s arguments

(i) Who are “under the law”?

Scott maintains that Paul regards all humanity, Jews and Gentiles alike, as being “under the law” in Galatians 4:5. We do not, however, concur with him on this specific point for two reasons.

First, this reading contradicts Paul’s usage of the phrase elsewhere, as the detailed studies of William Wilder and Brian Rosner convincingly demonstrate.⁵⁶⁷ For instance, in the case of 1 Corinthians 9:20, those who are ὑπὸ νόμον are clearly and exclusively identifiable with Jews under the Mosaic law. In fact, Paul plainly refers to Gentiles as “those outside the law” (1Cor 9:21; cf. Rom 2:12). In Romans, Wilder painstakingly demonstrates that the concept of “under the law” is not necessarily equated to that of “slavery to sin” (which condition is applicable to all humanity; cf. Rom 3:9) in this epistle. He indicates the fact that ‘while Paul freely *denies* that the Romans are “under the law” (6:14–15) he is careful only to *affirm* that they were once “slaves of sin” (6:17).’⁵⁶⁸ This point is corroborated by the fact that Paul writes that Jesus was ὑπὸ νόμον (Gal 4:4). Since it is unlikely that Paul believes that Jesus was enslaved by the power

⁵⁶⁶ Ibid., 173.

⁵⁶⁷ Wilder 2001, Rosner 2013.

⁵⁶⁸ Wilder 2001, 80 [Wilder’s italics]. It is also noticeable that Paul clearly states that Gentiles “do not possess the law” (Rom 2:14; cf. Rom 9:4).

of sin, the term ὑπὸ νόμον simply indicates the historical fact that Jesus was under the Mosaic law.

Wilder also points out that Paul presupposes that the dominion of sin over humanity had already been established prior to the introduction of the Mosaic law (Rom 5:12–14),⁵⁶⁹ which proves that “slavery to sin” is not necessarily identical with the situation “under the law”. Rather, the latter signifies the worst condition of the former. When a person is under the dominion of sin, the act of giving the law to him does not alleviate but accelerates his miserable situation. As Wilder claims, ‘although Paul understood existence “under the law” to refer specifically to the Jews, he also understood such experience as a representative subset of human experience in general insofar as it expressed in its most potent form the more general human plight of slavery to sin’.⁵⁷⁰ This point is further strengthened by Paul’s argument in Romans 1–3:

Romans 2:12: All who have sinned apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who have sinned under the law (ἐν νόμῳ) will be judged by the law.

Romans 3:19: Now we know that whatever the law says, it speaks to those who are under the law (ἐν τῷ νόμῳ), so that every mouth may be silenced, and the whole world may be held accountable to God.

While Paul here uses a different phrase (“in the law”: ἐν νόμῳ), he clearly distinguishes those who are bound by the law (i.e., Jews) from those who are outside the law (i.e., Gentiles).⁵⁷¹

Gathercole argues, ‘It is difficult to expand the concept of those in the Law to the whole world...There is very little evidence that gentiles were subject to judgment according to Torah

⁵⁶⁹ Paul also indicates that to be given the law is one of the prerogatives of Jews (Rom 9:4).

⁵⁷⁰ Ibid., 81.

⁵⁷¹ Cf. 1Cor 9:21.

in Paul's theology'.⁵⁷² Paul repeatedly stresses that the possession of the law is the divine prerogative of Jews (Rom 2:17, 23; 9:4). Jews are, however, denounced by the law precisely because of this prerogative (Rom 3:19).

Nowhere in the other Pauline letters can we find a passage that refers to Gentiles as being "under the law", we can therefore reasonably infer that, particularly in the light of the foregoing discussion, the same holds true for the epistle to the Galatians. In this epistle, however, the exegesis of the phrase ὑπὸ νόμον in 3:23 has become a fierce point of contention among Pauline scholars. It therefore deserves close attention.⁵⁷³ In order to understand the meaning of this phrase, it is vital to establish the context in which it is situated. With regard to the phrase ὑπὸ ἁμαρτίαν in the previous verse (i.e., Gal 3:22), the interpretation proposed by de Boer is brilliant, though our reading of the overall context from Galatians 3:19 onwards is significantly different from his. He aptly draws attention to the words τὰ πάντα ("all things") in Galatians 3:22, which is *neuter* plural, and he compares it with the word πάντας in Romans 3:9, which is *masculine* plural. Since the latter clearly refers to "both Jews and Greeks" (cf. Rom 11:32), the former cannot have the same meaning. In this light, de Boer renders Galatians 3:22 as follows: "But the scripture imprisoned all things, *including (the works of) the law*, under the power of Sin." The law, like everything else, is a captive of Sin'.⁵⁷⁴ This reading coheres with the preceding context, in which Paul stresses the inability of the Mosaic law to give life (cf. Gal 3:21). The implied logic behind verse 3:22 can then be expressed in this way: "Jews are given the law, but

⁵⁷² Gathercole 2002, 213.

⁵⁷³ Bruce Longenecker indicates, 'In a sense, many of the differences among contemporary interpretations of Galatians arise from different understandings of the relationship between what Paul says in 3:22 and in 3:23' (2012, 73).

⁵⁷⁴ De Boer 2012, 107 [de Boer's italics]. See also de Boer 2011, 235. This is precisely the point Paul makes in Romans 7:7–25.

the law itself is under the power of sin. Thus, as a corollary, Jews are under the power of sin".

De Boer's argument on the next verse, however, is unconvincing. He insists that the "we" in 3:23 refers to 'all believers in Christ, whether of Jewish or Gentile origin'.⁵⁷⁵ If this is the case, it implies that the word νόμος here does not represent the Mosaic law but a sort of universal law that is applicable to Jews and Gentiles alike, though de Boer is not unambiguous on this point. Whilst de Boer identifies νόμος in 3:17 and 3:19 with the Mosaic law,⁵⁷⁶ he does not provide a convincing account of why Paul suddenly employs the same word with a different meaning (i.e., the universal law) from 3:23 onwards. Moreover, if νόμος in 3:23 refers to a sort of universal law, it means that this law had been the disciplinarian (παιδαγωγός) of Jews and Gentiles alike, until Christ came (cf. Gal 3:24). We should, however, pay attention to the fact that Paul carefully switches the first person plural to the second person plural in verses 3:25–26: "But now that faith has come, *we* are no longer subject to a disciplinarian, for in Christ Jesus *you* are all children of God through faith". In this light, and provided that it is more natural to construe the "law/disciplinarian" mentioned in verses 3:23–25 as identical with the "law" described in 3:17 and 3:19,⁵⁷⁷ the most plausible interpretation is that the "we" refers solely to Jews and the "you" refers to the Galatian Christians, respectively.⁵⁷⁸ Consequently, the appropriate context from Galatians 3:19 onwards is the history of Jews, in particular their experiences under the guardianship of the Mosaic law. Hence, those who are ὑπὸ νόμον mentioned in Galatians 3:23 must signify "under the Mosaic law".

⁵⁷⁵ De Boer 2011, 240-1, 264; De Boer 2012, 108.

⁵⁷⁶ De Boer 2011, 220, 226-31.

⁵⁷⁷ We have no good reason to doubt this, since both of them are depicted in the same historical time-table.

⁵⁷⁸ See especially the argument of Stendahl (1976, 21-3).

We therefore conclude that in the undisputed Pauline letters there is not a single instance that identifies those who are “under the law” with humanity in general.

(ii) Who are “under the curse of the law”?

Second, even supposing that Paul believes that the putative universal law exists and is applicable to everyone,⁵⁷⁹ and that all human beings are to be judged by this universal law,⁵⁸⁰ this does not mean that Paul thinks that all humanity are under the “curse” of this universal law. It is not the law *per se* that causes “curses” or “blessings”. Rather, through the act of covenant-making, either or both parties make an oath, by which they are to suffer from the curse if they breach the covenant.⁵⁸¹ The Israelites were liable for the curse of the law, since they swore an oath to obey the Mosaic law:

Deuteronomy 27:26: “Cursed be anyone who does not uphold the words of this law by observing them”. *All the people shall say, “Amen”*.⁵⁸²

In the Deuteronomistic prophetic traditions, the “curse” only functions within the covenantal framework, as Weinfeld explains, ‘As the maledictions were a sanction against breach of treaty, so the purpose of the prophetic threats was to portray the calamities that would follow as a

⁵⁷⁹ A similar view is found in a work of Philo. See *Abr.* 5-6, 15.

⁵⁸⁰ It seems that this sort of idea became popular in the aftermath of the fall of Jerusalem in 70 CE, as Bauckham elucidates: ‘The assumption that God’s law is for Gentiles as well as Jews – with no attempt to define the difference between its universal and specifically Jewish features – appears particularly striking in a passage in book 8 [of the *Sibylline Oracles*], in which the notion of the two ways in the form in which it is presented by Moses to Israel at the end of Deut 30 expresses God’s address to all human creatures...4 Ezra too, quoting this very text (Deut 30:19), assumes that, though spoken by Moses to Israel, it is also the choice that confronts every human being (4Ezra 7:127-129)’ (2008b, 322).

⁵⁸¹ See esp., Hahn 2009, 50-9. To be sure, according to Genesis 3, the whole humanity is under the curse without making any covenantal oath. In Galatians, however, Paul specifically discusses the curse caused by the Mosaic law (cf. Gal 3:10; 5:3).

⁵⁸² Also see Deut 29:14-15.

consequence of the violation of Israel's covenant with Yahweh'.⁵⁸³

The descendants of the ancient Israelites who made a covenantal oath at Moab are automatically liable to the covenantal provisions, since this covenant is designed for all the succeeding generations of Israel:

You stand assembled today, all of you, before the Lord your God – the leaders of your tribes, your elders, and your officials, all the men of Israel, your children, your women, and the aliens who are in your camp, both those who cut your wood and those who draw your water – to enter into the covenant of the Lord your God, *sworn by an oath*, which the Lord your God is making with you today; in order that he may establish you today as his people, and that he may be your God, as he promised you and as he swore to your ancestor, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob. I am making this covenant, *sworn by an oath, not only with you who stand here with us today before the Lord our God, but also with those who are not here with us today*.⁵⁸⁴

Moreover, the covenantal oath for the Deuteronomic covenant was restated and reconfirmed, with central emphasis on the covenantal “curse”, by the post-exilic community.

The rest of the people, the priests, the Levites, the gatekeepers, the singers, the temple servants, and all who have separated themselves from the peoples of the lands to adhere to the law of God, their wives, their sons, their daughters, all who have knowledge and understanding, join with their kin, their nobles, and *enter into a curse and an oath to walk in God's law*, which was given by Moses the servant of God, and to observe and do all the commandments of the Lord our Lord and his ordinances and his statutes.⁵⁸⁵

The expression “entering into a curse” sounds peculiar. Also intriguing is the juxtaposition of

⁵⁸³ Weinfeld 1972, 137.

⁵⁸⁴ Deut 29:10-15. For a comprehensive survey of the theme of “curse” in Deuteronomy, see Wisdom 2001, 43-52.

⁵⁸⁵ Neh 10:28-29.

“curse” to “the oath” as well as to “the law”. On this point, Fensham comments, ‘The curse is closely connected to the oath. When the oath is broken, the curse will come into effect. It is a question of cause and effect. The breaking of the oath of the covenant automatically results in the curse’.⁵⁸⁶ The book of Daniel, a quintessentially apocalyptic piece of literature, clearly exhibits such a covenantal perspective: “All Israel has transgressed your law and turned aside, refusing to obey your voice. So *the curse and the oath written in the law of Moses*, the servant of God, has been poured out upon us, because we have sinned against you” (Dan 9:11).

The covenantal oath was, therefore, a historical *fact* for Paul and many of his Jewish contemporaries. They believed that they were still bound by their ancestral pledge. This point is corroborated by the testimony of Josephus, who writes:

Such then is the constitution that Moses left; he further delivered over those laws which he had written forty years before and of which we shall speak in another work. On the following days – for assembly was held continuously – he gave them blessings, with curses upon such as should not live in accordance with the laws but should transgress the ordinances that were therein. Then he recited to them a poem in hexameter verse, which he has moreover bequeathed in a book preserved in the temple, *containing a prediction of future events, in accordance with which all has come and is coming to pass*, the seer having no whit strayed from the truth.⁵⁸⁷

Josephus believes that he and other Jews are still living under the covenantal provisions of the Mosaic law, which would dispense either blessings or curses according to their performance of the Mosaic law.⁵⁸⁸ Philo also states:

⁵⁸⁶ Fensham 1982, 237.

⁵⁸⁷ *Ant.* 4. 302. On Josephus’ reading of Deuteronomy 27–30, see Thielman 1993, 232–3.

⁵⁸⁸ *Contra* Waters, who claims that this passage ‘offers no indication of the continuing significance of Deut 27–28 in his day’ (2006, 64). Lincicum comments on Josephus’ account, ‘One other major

A clear testimony is recorded in the Holy Scriptures. We will recite first the invocations [i.e., Deut 28:1] which he is accustomed to call benedictions. If, he says, you keep the divine commandment in obedience to his ordinances and accept his precepts, not merely to hear them but to carry them by your life and conduct, the first boon you will have victory over your enemies. For the commandments are not too huge and heavy for the strength of those whom they will apply, nor is the good far away either beyond the sea or at the end of the earth, *so that it requires of you a lingering and wearisome exile...*⁵⁸⁹

Philo emphasises the fact that the Deuteronomic blessing (“victory”) or curse (“exile”) is still relevant to the destiny of the national life of Israel, and thus calls for the stringent observance of the Mosaic law. As regards Philo’s reading of the last chapters of Deuteronomy, Lincicum explains, ‘Indeed, even in Philo’s figural appropriation of the Diaspora imagery, God’s ability to re-gather exiles functions as a given (cf. *Praem.* 117). This is not a major theme in Philo’s writings, nor does he develop an elaborate description of eschatological events, but he is aware of Deuteronomy’s exile-and-return schema and does not merely spiritualize it’.⁵⁹⁰

Morland conducts a comprehensive survey of ancient Jewish literature concerning how “curse” terminologies are used,⁵⁹¹ and concludes: ‘*Whenever we face a text with curse and blessing both in antithesis and sequence, we may suspect that it reflects conventional language dependent on the Deut 27–30 tradition*’.⁵⁹² Therefore, it seems undeniable that the

difference, perhaps understandable from Josephus’s viewpoint after the war of 66–70 CE, is that Josephus casts this prediction [Deut 29:10–21] as cyclical in nature: “although the God who created you will give back to your citizens both your cities and your Temple, the loss of these will occur not once but often” (Ant. 4.314)’ (2010, 178). It is an open question whether Josephus envisages the eschatological deliverance of Jews, which entails the establishment of the Temple that would never be destroyed.

⁵⁸⁹ *Praem.* 79–80.

⁵⁹⁰ Lincicum 2010, 111–2.

⁵⁹¹ As to the scope of research, Morland states, ‘I give preference to sources that may be dated prior to or contemporary with Paul. This means that I consider texts within the Hebrew Bible, the Apocrypha, the oldest Pseudepigrapha [sic.], Qumran, Philo, and Josephus’ (1995, 22).

⁵⁹² Ibid., 50 [Morland’s italics]. Waters criticises this view, arguing: ‘Because the “curse/blessing” antithesis has a distinguished pedigree in the literature of the Ancient Near East, it is impossible to preclude, without such an argument, that Paul has drawn this pattern from other sources’ (2006, 89). It is

Deuteronomic covenantal perspective and its terminology of “curse and blessing” exerted a considerable influence on the hearts of many first century Jews. When these Jews heard the reading of Deuteronomy 27–30, they would likely be reminded of the fact they were still under the threat of the covenantal curses. As F. F. Bruce puts it, ‘It may be that the curses (with the corresponding blessings recited on Mount Gerizim, Dt. 28:1– 6) were not pronounced once and for all, but were repeated periodically as part of a covenant-renewal ceremony. An elaborated form was repeated on solemn occasions by the covenant community of Qumran (1QS 2:1–18)’.⁵⁹³ If the Mosaic covenantal curses were so real for first century Jews,⁵⁹⁴ it would not be far-fetched to say that Paul considered that, for Jews, the only way to be released from the ancestral covenantal oath and the threat of the curse was to die with Christ (cf. Rom 7:1–6; Gal 2:19).⁵⁹⁵

(iii) Reconsidering of Galatians 4:3–7

The argument presented above strongly indicates that the “curse” of the Mosaic law is only applicable to those who bind themselves to the Mosaic covenant. The term “under the law” is

of course “impossible” to exclude any possibility. However, we can pose the question: which is more plausible for Paul to resort to the Jewish scriptures or to a pagan tradition, in order to defend his case?

⁵⁹³ Bruce 1982, 158. Concerning “blessings and curses” in the covenantal context in the Qumran community, see esp., Nitzan 1994, 119-43. As to 4QMMT, see Berstein 1996, 46-50.

⁵⁹⁴ We can maintain that this would have held true at least for those who experienced the catastrophe of Jerusalem in 70 CE, as Bauckham argues, ‘we have already seen how the closing chapters of Deuteronomy were a regular resource of Jewish eschatology, including those apocalypses which wrestled with the problem of understanding God’s purpose for Israel in the light of the catastrophe of 70 CE’ (2008b, 319).

⁵⁹⁵ Concerning Romans 7:1–6, N. T. Wright states, ‘He is addressing them as people who know the law. This could, of course, mean Roman law in general, in which, as in Jewish law, death pays all debts; but in view of the subject matter it is far more likely to mean the Jewish law’ (2002, 558). If Wright is correct, it would make better sense to see that “the Law” herein functions as a metonym for “the Mosaic covenant”, since Paul asserts that Christians should not abandon but fulfil the Law (cf. Rom 3:31; 8:4).

virtually equivalent to “under the Mosaic covenant”.⁵⁹⁶ Hence, Scott’s claim that both Jews and Gentiles are under the law in Galatians 4:5 is doubtful. What would be a proper reading of Galatians 4:3–7, then, if we apply our insight from the argument so far? First of all, it is necessary to identify the “we” (ἡμεῖς) mentioned in 4:3. In this regard, Scott argues:

[I]t must be taken into consideration that Paul uses the first-person plural to refer, at different times in the Epistle, to four distinct groups of people...First, Paul clearly uses “we” of Jews over against Gentiles in his speech in Antioch (cf. 2:15, 16, 17)... Second, Paul can also use “we” in reference to both himself and his fellow workers (cf. 1:8, 9; 2:4, 5, 9, 10), or third, in a statement reportedly made by the churches of Judea (cf. 1:23). Fourth and most commonly, however, Paul uses “we” to include both Jewish and Gentile believers.⁵⁹⁷

Scott claims that the “we” mentioned in 3:25 belongs to the fourth category (i.e., referring to both Jews in general and the Galatian Christians),⁵⁹⁸ but we do not concur with his view for the reasons explained above. It is an exaggeration to say that Paul “most commonly” uses “we” to refer to both Jewish and Gentile believers. Rather, when Paul constructs his argument from the Jewish historical perspective, “we” in most cases refers to either Jews in general or Jewish believers in particular.⁵⁹⁹ Hence, we do not agree with Scott’s following statement: ‘It may be assumed, therefore, that in 4:3, 5, 6 ἡμεῖς includes the Galatian Gentile-Christians, especially

⁵⁹⁶ Wilson argues that, in Galatians, the phrase “under Law” is used as rhetorical shorthand for “under the curse of the Law”. Wilson 2007, 31-37. However, at least in the case of Gal 3:23, it would make better sense to render this phrase as “under the Mosaic covenant”, since παιδαγωγός in verse 3:24 does not necessarily involve a negative connotation. See Dunn 1993, 199. Instead, we concur with the view held by Hafemann, who indicates that νόμος too is being used as a metonymy, in the case for the Sinai covenant (cf. 3:17 and 4:24). Hafemann 1997, 342.

⁵⁹⁷ Scott 1992, 156.

⁵⁹⁸ Ibid., 156.

⁵⁹⁹ So with Witherington 1998, 236-7. In Galatians 4:21-31, Paul seems to apply both “you” and “we” more freely to Gentile believers (cp. Gal 4:26, 28, 31). We shall return to this point in due course.

since, as elsewhere in the Epistle, Paul bases a statement about “us” on a statement about “you” and then oscillates suddenly between “we” (v. 6b) and you (v. 7).⁶⁰⁰

The starting point of our argument is 4:5. Given that “those who were under the law” refers to Jews, the most natural reading of the subsequent “we” is that it also refers to Jews, though non-Christian Jews are not included in this word.⁶⁰¹ As is the case in 3:23–26, here Paul would have spoken of the re-adoption of Jews first (4:5),⁶⁰² then moved to the adoption of Gentiles (4:6a). Admittedly, the next phrase “into our hearts” (εἰς τὰς καρδίας ἡμῶν) seems to contradict our reading, and the manuscript evidence for ἡμῶν would be stronger than ὑμῶν (“your”).⁶⁰³ Yet, ὑμῶν is more fitting to the immediate context, as Bruce comments, ‘The 2nd person pronoun ὑμῶν would be expected after ἐστέ in the preceding clause (hence, no doubt, its wide attestation as a variant reading)’.⁶⁰⁴ Even if Paul deliberately introduces the inclusive “we” (i.e., both Jewish and Gentile believers) for some theological reason,⁶⁰⁵ the fact remains that Paul switches from the first person (ἀπολάβωμεν) in 4:5b to the second person (ἐστέ) in 4:6a, as he did in 3:25–26. Therefore, except for 4:6b, “we” in 4:3 and 4:5 most probably refers to Jewish believers.

In this reading, the contents of Galatians 4:3–7 and 3:13–14 are essentially the same. That is, Christ suffered the ultimate curse of the Mosaic Law to redeem (Christ-believing) Jews who

⁶⁰⁰ Scott 1992, 157.

⁶⁰¹ On this point, Hays claims that 4:5a and 5b refer to Jews and Gentiles, respectively (2000, 284). However, the “eschatological adoption” of Jews who had been under the curse of the exile was an important theme for at least some of first century Jews, as Scott rightly claims.

⁶⁰² It is the biblical idea that Israel, the wife of Yahweh, was once divorced, but would be re-engaged (cf. Isa 50:1; Hos 1–3). Moreover, in Hosea, the sons of Israel would be “re”-adopted by God (cf. Hos 1:8–9; 2:23). Hence, it would not have been strange for Paul to say that Jews “might receive adoption as children”.

⁶⁰³ Cf. Metzger 1971, 595.

⁶⁰⁴ Bruce 1982, 198.

⁶⁰⁵ Since Gentiles’ experience of the Spirit is the most crucial evidence for their acceptance by God (cf. Gal 3:1–5).

had been under the curse of the Mosaic law. Some of the redeemed Jews, like Paul (cf. Rom 15:16), are now dispatched to Gentiles, in order that the promised blessings to the nations may be fulfilled through their ministry. This understanding gains support from the historical fact of early Christian mission. The actual course of history of the early Christian movement had advanced in exactly this way. It is indisputable that all the earliest Christians were Jews. As a corollary, all the earliest missionaries to Gentiles were also Jews.

2. 3. 5 Summary

Although in one critical point we disagree with Scott, we find his larger argument to be convincing. Galatians 3:13–14 and 4:1–7 are rooted in the same story – a new Exodus from the protracted curse of the Mosaic covenant, which is foretold in the underlying narrative of Deuteronomy 27–32. The problem of Scott’s overall argument is that while he properly reads Galatians against the backdrop of Deuteronomy 27–32, he virtually ignores the significance of Isaiah 49–55 in Paul’s discourse. Still, his argument supports our contention that Isaiah 53 is the crucial background of Galatians 3:13, since Isaiah 53 itself ought to be understood as the realisation of the restoration of Israel envisaged in Deuteronomy 30. Scott’s argument is corroborated by the close study of the Dead Sea Scrolls, to which we shall now turn.

2. 4 Florentino García Martínez

2. 4. 1 Introduction

Scott maintains that the underlying theme of Galatians 3:10–14 is the deliverance from the

protracted exile. The plausibility of his argument would be strengthened if we can find a similar or parallel thought in other branch of Second Temple Judaism. In this regard, the study of the Dead Sea Scrolls takes on a growing importance, since the “exile-exodus” theme is critically important in the formation of the Qumran community. Schmidt argues that the “exile” mode of thinking shaped the self-identity of this community:

Of course, the [Qumran] Community presents itself as a *dispersion*, as a *remnant*, and it is true that it uses this model of the Exile in Babylon to think of its present separation from the Temple. But it does not limit itself to this model alone. With the exegetical daring customary with these masters of the commentary, the *Peshet*, it intertwines the theme of the Exile with that of the Exodus...It is because, at the end of the exile in Babylon, God ‘remembered the Covenant of the forefathers’ that he raised up a ‘remnant’: for it, he will renew his Covenant, for it he will again make a gift of the land (Damascus Document 1.4–8). Thus, behind the model of the Exile, there is another much more pregnant one: that of the Exodus.⁶⁰⁶

Martínez points out some striking thematic similarities between Galatians 3:10–14 and texts from the Qumran caves, and this would enable us to situate Galatians 3:10–14 within at least some Jewish theological currents in the late Second Temple period. In this section, then, we shall review his analyses of two of the main topics in Galatians 3:10–14: “the works of the law”, and “Spirit as the eschatological blessings”.

2. 4. 2 “Works of the law”

James Dunn argues that the phrase “the works of the law” (ἔργα νόμου) that appears in Paul’s

⁶⁰⁶ Schmidt 2001, 144. This way of understanding the self-perception of the Qumran community becomes the scholarly consensus. E.g., J. J. Collins 1997, 52-70; Abegg 1997; Blenkinsopp 2006, 230-41.

soteriological arguments does not signify ‘good works done as an attempt to gain or achieve righteousness’⁶⁰⁷ but a series of laws that function as the identity markers that separate Israel as God’s chosen people from the rest of the world:

[T]he phrase “the works of the law,” does, of course, refer to all or whatever the law requires, covenantal nomism as a whole. But in a context where the relationship of Israel with other nations is at issue, certain laws would naturally come more into focus than others. We have instanced circumcision and food laws in particular. In the Qumran sect the sensitive issues were not those between Jews and Gentiles, but those between Jews and Jews, and so focused on internal disagreements on issues like sacrifice and purity...Today we might think of issues like abortion, women priests, scriptural inerrancy, or papal infallibility. None of the disputants in such internal controversies would regard the point at issue as the whole of their faith or even as the most important element in their faith. But the issues have become foci of controversy to such an extent that the status of the opponent’s confession as a whole can in fact be called into question.⁶⁰⁸

Martínez tests the validity of Dunn’s argument in the light of the Qumran documents. He maintains that the phrase “some of works of the Law” in 4QMMT does not simply refer to some important laws, but to the interpretation of these laws, which distinguishes the author(s)’ group from the rest of Israel. Martínez then basically endorses Dunn’s argument on “the works of the law”:

But if we consider the context of its first use in Galatians, after the two conflicts to which Paul has alluded before, the incident in Jerusalem (in Gal 2:2–4: the problem of circumcision) and the incident in Antioch (in Gal 2:11–14: the problem of the dietary laws), it seems clear that Paul uses the expression to refer to the practice of those laws

⁶⁰⁷ Dunn 1998, 354.

⁶⁰⁸ Ibid., 358–9. See also Abegg 2006, 67.

that Peter and other observant Jews consider so important that they force them to separate from the people who accord less importance to these laws, be they Christians of Gentile origin who are not circumcised, or Christians of Jewish origin who have abandoned the dietary laws, as Peter did before changing his opinion. What this means is that for Paul, as for the authors of 4QMMT, the “works of the Law” are concrete norms, whose practice or refusal of practice, is considered essential for the identity of the group, forcing those who practice them to separate from those who do not practice them or who interpret them in a different way.⁶⁰⁹

Not a few scholars dissent from the reading proposed by Dunn and Martínez. Jason Meyer contends, ‘Paul explicitly refers to the broad scope of the law in other places in Galatians to include the whole law, not just the so-called ceremonial aspects of the law’.⁶¹⁰ Martínez would have no quarrel with this point. However, as many commentators rightly acknowledge, this epistle as a whole is written in a highly polemical context, and we should not lose sight of this fact when interpreting the phrase in question. What is at stake is not an abstract argument of whether perfect obedience of the whole law is possible, but the urgent problem of determining who are the true descendants of Abraham, heirs according to the promise (cf. Gal 3:29). In this critical situation, it would have been natural for Paul to pay particular attention to a specific aspect of the law, namely, the Mosaic law as the identity marker.⁶¹¹

Galatians and 4QMMT have one key thing in common. Both attempt to demonstrate who are to be the beneficiaries of the eschatological blessings and who are to be cursed by the law.

⁶⁰⁹ Martínez 2014, 55-6. Barclay also comments, ‘The immediate context of the Antioch dispute makes clear that “works of the law” are equivalent to “living like a Jew”, and Paul’s point is that this distinctively Jewish pattern of behaviour is not an essential feature of justification’ (1988, 78).

⁶¹⁰ Meyer 2009, 150, n. 117. Silva also states, ‘It is evident that the quotation from Deut 27:26, which immediately follows, has in view general obedience to the things written in the law’ (2001, 259). See also Schreiner 1991.

⁶¹¹ In the case of the epistle to the Romans, since the purpose of Paul is to demonstrate the failure of Jews as a nation to observe the Mosaic law, this phrase denotes the Mosaic law in general or as a whole. See Gathercole 2002, 239-40.

On 4QMMT, Martínez thus states: ‘This interpretation pertains not just to legal aspects, but also extends to the history of the people, since it refers to the blessings and curses that have happened or will still happen. Thanks to this interpretation, the group that wrote the document has discovered that the blessings and curses announced in Scripture have already happened and that they are now living in the “last days.”’⁶¹² Those who observe “the works of the law” stipulated in 4QMMT are now enjoying and will enjoy the eschatological blessings:

4QMMT 99–108: And it is written that [all] these [things] shall happen to you at the end of days, the blessing and the curse [...and you shall ass]ent in your heart and turn to me with all your heart [and with a]ll your soul [...at the e]nd [of time] and you shall be [...] [And it is written in the book of] Moses and in [the words of the prop]hets that [blessings and curses] will come upon you] which [...] [the bl]essings which c[ame upon] him in the days of Solomon the son of David and also the curses which came upon him from the [days of Je]roboam son of Nebat right up to the capture of Jerusalem and of Zedekiah, king of Judah [that] he should bring them in [...]. And we are aware that part of the blessings and curses have occurred that are written in the b[ook of Mo]ses. And this is the end of days, when they go back to Israel for[ever...] and not return [...] and the wicked will act wickedly and [...].⁶¹³

To be sure, there are clear differences between 4QMMT and Galatians as to the use of the phrase in question. Whereas “the works of the law” in 4QMMT is introduced in the context of an intra-Jewish controversy, Paul uses this term in the heat of crisis of Jewish-Gentile relations within early Christian communities. More important, the author(s) of 4QMMT and Paul hold diametrically opposed views on the importance of the Mosaic law for the eschatological people of God. As N. T. Wright explains, ‘MMT presupposed obedience to the biblical Torah itself,

⁶¹² Martínez 2014, 54.

⁶¹³ Translated by Martínez.

and added extra commands as a further interpretation of how precisely one should keep Torah...For Paul, in other words, faith is not something which is simply added to to existing Torah-observance; it supplants Torah-observance, denying it any importance'.⁶¹⁴

Still, it can be reasonably claimed that both of them broadly share an awareness of the critical role of “the works of the law”. They share the historical awareness that the eschatological time of blessings has already dawned, and they also share the urgent necessity to clarify who are really the beneficiaries of the eschatological blessings. In this context, the role of “the works of the law” is to distinguish those who observe them from the rest of the people: Whereas the authors of 4QMMT insist that those who are *not* doing “the works of the law” are still “under the curses of the law”, Paul claims precisely the opposite (Gal 3:10).

2. 4. 3 Spirit as a sign of the eschatological blessings

In Paul’s argument, the fact of Christ’s becoming a curse is directly linked to the reception of the promise of the Spirit (Gal 3:13–14). In this epistle, Paul repeatedly stresses the importance of the Spirit as a sign of the eschatological blessings, which enables Christians to fulfil the law (Gal 3:2–5; 4:6; 5:16–25; cf. Rom 8:4). In Paul’s train of thought, the “Spirit” and “grace” seem to be closely connected in relation to the law, as the following statements show:

Galatians 5:18: But if you are led by the *Spirit*, you are not subject to the law.

Romans 6:14b: since you are not under law but under *grace*.

In the Christian theological tradition, it has long been thought that the apostle Paul is the first

⁶¹⁴ N. T. Wright 2013b, 347.

theologian to discover the doctrine of “grace alone”. This conversely suggests that Judaism in Paul’s time did not know the total dependence on God’s grace. However, Martínez states: ‘With the publication of the Cave 1 manuscripts of the *Community Rule* and of the *Hodayot* it became clear that the concept of *sola gratia* had its precedents’.⁶¹⁵ Martínez’s comment becomes intelligible when we consider the role of the “Spirit” in the Qumran literature.

In the first place, we shall see two passages from the *Hodayot* that are somehow redolent of Paul’s argument in Romans (Rom 3:9–20), both of which stress that no one can stand in the divine law court.⁶¹⁶

1QH^a 15.31–32: For who is like you among the gods, O Lord? Who has truth like yours? Who can be righteous before you when he is judged? There is no utterance of the breath to offer in reply to your rebuke, and none is able to stand before your wrath.

1QH^a 17.14–15: And I know th[at] there is hope in your kindness and expectation in the abundance of your strength. For no one can be justified in your judgment [כי לא יצדק כול במשפמכה], and no one can be acqui[tted] in your proceedings.⁶¹⁷

Although the psalmist does not quote directly from the Jewish scriptures, he, like Paul, is most likely alluding to Psalm 143:2 and combining a divine court imagery. Most writings of the sectarian communities emphatically stress the necessity of the stringent observation of all the rules of the communities in order to maintain membership in the communities (e.g., 1QS

⁶¹⁵ Martínez 2014, 60.

⁶¹⁶ It is generally considered that the *Thanksgiving scrolls* (*Hodayot*) are written by the Teacher of Righteousness or his close disciple. For the psalmist describes himself as follows: ‘But you have made me a banner for the elect of righteousness and an expert interpreter of wonderful mysteries in order to test [persons of] truth and to prove those who love moral discipline’. (1QH^a 10.15–16). Cf. Grundmann 1968, 86–95.

⁶¹⁷ Edited by Hartmut Stegemann with Eileen Schuller. Translated by Carol Newton. As to a typical pronominal suffix in the Dead Sea Scrolls, Qimron explains: ‘The regular 2nd person masculine singular form כה־ occurs about 900 times’ (1986, 58).

1.1–20),⁶¹⁸ and the psalmist of the *Hodayot* (*Thanksgiving Scroll*) emphasises this point as well (cf. 1QH^a 6.25–29, 32–33). He nonetheless argues that any human effort falls short of attaining divine approval:

1QH^a 12.29–32: What being of flesh is like this? And what creature of clay is able to do wondrous great deeds? It (exists) in sin from the womb, and until old age in faithless guilt. But as for me, I know that righteousness does not belong to humankind nor perfection of way to a mortal. To God Most High belong all the works of righteousness. The way of humanity is not established except by the spirit God has fashioned for it, in order to perfect a way for mortal beings, so that they may know all his works through his mighty strength and his abundant compassion toward all the children of his good will. But as for me, trembling and quaking have seized me, and all my bones shatter. My heart melts like wax before the fire, and my knees give way like water hurtling down a slope. For I remember my guilty acts together with the unfaithfulness of my ancestors, when the wicked rose against your covenant and the vile against your word. And I said, ‘In my sin I have been abandoned, far from your covenant’. But when I remembered the strength of your hand together with your abundant compassion, I stood strong and rose up, and in my spirit held fast to (its) station in the face of affliction. For I am supported by your kindness, and according to your abundant compassion to me, you pardon iniquity and thus clean[se] a person from guilt through your righteousness [בצדקתכה].⁶¹⁹

The psalmist confesses that it is the righteousness of God that brings about the pardon of his sins. As Burrow argues, ‘The Thanksgiving Psalms and the concluding psalm of the Manual of Discipline express also a profound sense of the righteousness of God, by which a man is given a righteousness he could never attain for himself’.⁶²⁰ For the psalmist, righteous deeds are the

⁶¹⁸ In 1QS, the obedience to the commandments are not simply for remaining in the covenant, but for the vindication in the Final Judgement. See Gathercole 2002, 96–110; VanLangingham 2006, 102–135.

⁶¹⁹ Edited by Hartmut Stegemann with Eileen Schuller. Translated by Carol Newton.

⁶²⁰ Barrows 1958, 120. cf. 1QH^a 5:33–34; 13:29–30. In the *Rule of Community*, it reads as: ‘The human

outcome of the spirit that God graciously gives him (cf. 1QH^a 4.29, 38; 5.35–36; 6.23–24; 8.29; 20.14–15).⁶²¹ Frey puts the point well writing, ‘God’s holy spirit is the means of exaltation of the human being from dust, the means of removing the “perverted spirit”, or even the means of “justification,” and it is stated explicitly that humans as such cannot achieve it by themselves, but only by an action of God’s grace’.⁶²²

To Paul, righteous deeds cannot be produced by one’s own effort. Rather, they are the “fruit” of the outworking of the Holy Spirit within Christian believers (cf. Gal 5:22–23).⁶²³ On this point, there is a marked similarity between the sectarian authors and Paul, as Käsemann rightly states, ‘the Thanksgiving Psalms from Qumran show very clearly that the present manifestation of the divine righteousness was already being stressed in apocalyptic Judaism in precisely the same way as can be detected in Paul’.⁶²⁴ Since ‘Paul presumably was never able to read the “sectarian” texts from Qumran’,⁶²⁵ such a similarity is indeed striking. In the late Second Temple period, Paul was not unique in stressing the necessity of dependence on God’s grace, i.e., the divine spirit, for the fulfillment of the law.

The fact that Paul and the psalmist of the *Hodayot* held a similar view that only by the power of the divine spirit⁶²⁶ can humans obey or fulfil the law satisfactorily suggests that their

cannot establish his righteousness; for to God (alone) belongs the judgment and from him the perfection of the Way’. (1QS 11.10–11). Translated by James H. Charlesworth.

⁶²¹ Cf. Smith 2006, 91–5; Lee 2013, 164–5.

⁶²² Frey 2014, 254.

⁶²³ See esp., Barclay 1988, 106–45.

⁶²⁴ Käsemann 1969, 178.

⁶²⁵ Frey 2014, 240.

⁶²⁶ We cannot simply equate the “Holy Spirit” in the New Testament with the “spirit” variously described in the Qumran documents. It is often difficult in the Qumran writings to distinguish whether it refers to the divine spirit or a human spirit. Cf. Lee 2013, 168–9. The same holds true for Paul, as N. T. Wright indicates, ‘Throughout the passage [Rom 8:1–17] some have questioned which uses of “spirit” refer to the Holy Spirit and which to the human spirit that each person has’ (2002, 594). However, ‘whereas the expression “holy spirit” is very rarely used in the Hebrew Bible (and only slightly more frequently in the LXX), most of the Hodayot passages mentioning God’s spirit use the term “holy” to characterize it’ (Frey

eschatological expectations seem to have been rooted in the same cluster of biblical texts that envisages the fulfilment of God's commandments in the eschatological community, such as Isaiah 59:21, Jeremiah 31:31–34, and Ezekiel 36:26–27.⁶²⁷ These texts envisage, as Deuteronomy 27–30 foretells, that Israel is to be kept in a dark period, or in exile in a metaphorical sense, until the glorious promises, such as the covenant renewal and the outpouring of the divine spirit, will start to be realised.⁶²⁸ As Wagner explains, '[T]his Deuteronomic story of exile and restoration, in which Israel is endowed by God with the ability to obey the covenant fully, shaped the self-understanding and hopes of at least some post-exilic Jewish groups. Paul's own narrative of God's dealing with Israel appears to have been similarly molded in a profound way by the sequence of events recounted in Deuteronomy 29–30'.⁶²⁹ N. T. Wright succinctly summarises the covenantal and eschatological perspective of 4QMMT section C, which is partially quoted in the previous section: 'This locates the writer's own intended position within an eschatological scheme, prophesied in Deuteronomy, as follows: (a) blessings under Solomon; (b) curse from Jeroboam to Zedekiah, climaxing in exile, which is still continuing; (c) the return of God and to Israel, now being inaugurated'.⁶³⁰ We also find such an eschatological vision in the *Words of the Luminaries*.⁶³¹

4Q504. 5.9–16: You have remembered Your covenant whereby You brought us forth

2014, 254).

⁶²⁷ See 4Q504 (the *Words of the Luminaries*) frags. 1–2 2.13–14, which allude to Jeremiah 31:31. Philip also argues that this text is probably influenced by Isaiah 44:3 (2005, 85). However, it is unlikely that this text originated in the Qumran communities (Smith 2006, 79–82). See also 1QH^a 12.10–12. As to the significance of Jeremiah and Ezekiel in Paul's thought, Hafemann argues, 'The letter/Spirit contrast in [2Cor] 3:6b thus brings together the concerns from both Ezek. 36:25f. and Jer. 31:31–34 as expressed in 3:3b and 3:6b respectively' (1995, 158).

⁶²⁸ See especially Isa 63:7–64:12.

⁶²⁹ Wagner 2002, 255–6.

⁶³⁰ N. T. Wright 2013b, 341. See also Bernstein 1996, 49–50; Wagner, *ibid.*, 166, n.143; Smith 2006, 80–2.

⁶³¹ Cf. Morales 2009, 271–2. See our review of Richard Hays in this chapter (2.2.2).

from Egypt while the nations looked on. You have not abandoned us among the nations; rather, You have shown covenant mercies to Your people in all [the] lands to which You have exiled them. You have again placed it on their hearts to return to You, to obey Your voice [according] to all that You have commanded through Your servant Moses. [In]deed, You have poured out Your holy spirit upon us, [br]inging Your blessings to us.⁶³²

It is indeed plausible that Paul and the Qumran community had a similar historical perspective, namely, the end of the exile in their eschatological communities.⁶³³ The sharp difference between them lies in the fact that Paul claims that Gentile Christians *qua* Gentiles can participate in the eschatological blessings.⁶³⁴

2. 4. 4 Summary

The comparison of Pauline texts with some Qumran texts reinforced Scott's case that the underlying narrative of both Galatians 4:3–6 and 3:13–14 is the new Exodus. This point further suggests the potential importance of Isaiah 49–55 for Paul's discourse in Galatians, since the new Exodus is one of the central themes of Isaiah 49–55. Finally, we shall review a scholar who strongly advocates a narrative reading of Galatians as a whole.

2. 5 N. T. Wright

2. 5. 1 Introduction

N. T. Wright maintains that the narrative substructure beneath Paul's various arguments in

⁶³² Translated by Wise, Abegg, and Cook. See also *Jub.* 1.23.

⁶³³ Cf. Blenkinsopp 2006, 244.

⁶³⁴ Cf. Philip 2005, 84-8; Lee 2013, 170-2.

Galatians 2–4 is the “story of Israel”. According to Wright, Saul of Tarsus, a “zealous” Pharisee, had in mind the story of an “unredeemed” Israel.⁶³⁵ That is to say, he was frustrated with Israel’s miserable situation of ‘continuing exile and subjugation’.⁶³⁶ This story is, however, freshly and radically re-shaped in a christological and pneumatological light.⁶³⁷ Wright describes this revised story as follows: ‘The resurrection itself demonstrated that the real enemy was not “the gentiles”, not even the horrible spectre of pagan empire. The real enemy was Death itself, the ultimate anti-creation force, with Sin...the experience of the spirit revealed the extent to which hardness of heart and blindness of mind had been endemic up to the point across the whole human race’.⁶³⁸

In Wright’s view, however, Paul does not fully expound this “cosmic” or “apocalyptic” story in Galatians. Rather, Paul’s argument remains in the salvation-historical perspective: the primary purpose of Paul is to expound how the renewal of Israel’s covenant accompanies the inclusion of Gentiles into Abraham’s family. For this reason, both Deuteronomy 27–30 and Isaiah 40–55 occupy important places in Paul’s discourse in Galatians. The former pays particular attention to the redemption of Israel, while latter puts more emphasis on the universal salvation. This is a significant point of difference between James Scott and N. T. Wright. In Wright’s analysis of Galatians, Deutero-Isaiah plays a much more prominent role in Paul’s

⁶³⁵ Cf. N. T. Wright 2013a, 749. Concerning Wright’s view on pre-conversion Paul, see, e.g., Wright 1997, 25-37. He writes, ‘The theology which sustained the revolutionaries thus included a reading of Israel’s scriptures which told them in no uncertain terms where they were living in God’s plan and what they should do to further it. Saul, like a great many Jews of his day, read the Jewish Bible not least as a story in search of an ending; and he conceived of his own task as being to bring that ending about. The story ran like this. Israel had been called to be the covenant people of the creator God, to be the light that would lighten the dark world, the people through whom God would undo the sin of Adam and its effects. But Israel had become sinful, and as a result had gone into exile, away from her own land. Although she had returned geographically from her exile, the real exilic condition was not yet finished’ (1997, 30-31).

⁶³⁶ Bauckham 2008b, 326.

⁶³⁷ Cf. N. T. Wright, *ibid.*, 752-64.

⁶³⁸ *Ibid.*, 761.

discourse.

In what follows, we shall examine how Wright delineates the underlying story of Israel in Galatians 2–4, and consider whether his account is sufficiently convincing.

2. 5. 2 Galatians 2:11–2:21: The Antioch incident

Wright stresses that the hermeneutical key to Galatians 3–4 lies in the Antioch incident described in 2:11–14.⁶³⁹ This event poses a critical question to Christians in Antioch: what is the decisive factor that defines the people of God, Jesus the Messiah or Torah? As Wright puts it: ‘Which is the most important division: that between Jews and non-Jews (because Messiah-believing Jews would still be able to eat with non-Messiah-believing Jews), or that between those who believed and those who did not? Was Messiah-faith simply a subset of Judaism, leaving the basic structure untouched, or did it change everything?’⁶⁴⁰ Wright argues that this crucial question compels Paul to *redefine* clearly who are God’s chosen people, the descendants of Abraham. The redefining of God’s people inevitably leads to the reshaping of the story of God’s people in Paul’s train of thought. This reshaped story of Israel, argues Wright, underlies Paul’s subsequent arguments.

Wright maintains that Paul’s statement in 2:19–20 is not simply his autobiographical monologue, but in fact the story of Israel: ‘He is telling the story of what has happened to Israel, the elect people of God – and he is using the rhetorical form of quasi-autobiography, because he will not tell this story in the third person, as though it were someone else’s story, as though he

⁶³⁹ So Barclay comments, ‘Paul recounts the incident of his disagreement with Peter at Antioch over the question of eating with Gentiles. Although this event is probably recorded last in the series chiefly because it occurred last, it also serves an important purpose as a bridge between the more historical and the more theological sections of the epistle’ (1988, 76).

⁶⁴⁰ Wright 2013a, 854–5.

could look on from a distance (or from a height!) and merely describe it with a detached objectivity'.⁶⁴¹ Israel, which had been defined by Torah, is now 'formed according to the pattern of his [Jesus'] death and resurrection'.⁶⁴² His point seems to be basically correct in the light of the similar expression in Romans 7:4, which is addressed to Jewish Christians (cf. Rom 7:1). If Torah becomes an impediment to the formation and fellowship of God's renewed people, it must be set aside. Paul claims, according to Wright, that the old Israel died to Torah through dying in and with their Messiah.⁶⁴³

2. 5. 3 Galatians 3:1–9: The story of Abraham

Wright maintains that Paul continues to tell the story of Israel from various angles in Galatians 3–4. 'The single argument we think of as 3.6–4.7 divides itself into four parts, each one of which tells the same story in miniature. In each case the story begins with the earlier history of Israel, faces the problem which that history has run into, and postulates *Christos* as the one through whom the problem has been resolved, and the original purpose fulfilled'.⁶⁴⁴ Wright contends that Paul does not start telling the story of Abraham from 3:6 onwards because he is forced to do so by his opponents, who attempted to persuade the Galatians to accept circumcision by appealing to the story of Abraham, not least to the episode of circumcision in Genesis 17.⁶⁴⁵ On the contrary, Paul sets Abraham's story at the outset of his scriptural discourse since he is fully aware of the founding character of Genesis 15 for the entire story of

⁶⁴¹ Ibid., 852.

⁶⁴² Ibid., 857.

⁶⁴³ Cf. Barclay 1988, 79-81.

⁶⁴⁴ Wright 2013b, 525.

⁶⁴⁵ *Contra*, e.g., Martyn 1997b, 297, 302-6. For a good summary of these scholars' view, see Wisdom 2001, 140, n.57, 58.

Israel. According to Wright, Genesis 15 contains three important issues for Paul's scriptural discourse.⁶⁴⁶ Since Wright's argument in this regard is crucially important to understand Paul's following arguments, we shall critically review Wright's proposal in what follows.

The first issue is the "covenant", as Wright states, 'he [Paul] knows that Genesis 15 is the *covenant* chapter'.⁶⁴⁷ Paul uses the episode in Genesis 15 not because it conveniently provides some key terms he wants to exploit, such as "faith" and "righteousness".⁶⁴⁸ Rather, in Wright's view, Paul appeals to this chapter precisely because it contains the covenant-making episode, which is the foundation of God's salvific plan through *Israel*, the "seed" of Abraham. This point is indeed crucial in Wright's whole understanding of Galatians. His following argument, however, does not fully leverage this insight. That is, Wright translates the term *διαθήκη* in 3:15 and 3:17 as "the covenanted will", and he suggests that Paul exploits the dual meaning ("covenant" and "will") of this word.⁶⁴⁹ This rendering is misleading for the following reason. It must be stressed that the biblical notions of "promise" and "covenant" are not the same. According to Williamson, the "covenant" exhibits two distinctive features:

- A covenant ratifies an already forged or existing elective relationship.
- The ratification involves the making of solemn promises *by means of a verbal and/or enacted oath*.⁶⁵⁰

Through the ratification process of a covenant, a promise is to be *absolutised* by means of a

⁶⁴⁶ Wright 2013a, 861.

⁶⁴⁷ Ibid., 861.

⁶⁴⁸ Against E. P. Sanders (2001, 66-7).

⁶⁴⁹ Cf. Ibid., 868.

⁶⁵⁰ Williamson 2007, 43 [my emphasis]. Quell also explains, 'There is no firmer guarantee of legal security, peace or personal loyalty than the covenant. Regard for the institution is made a religious duty by means of the oath taken at its establishment'. Quell and Behm, "*διαθήκη*," *TDNT* 2:115.

“verbal and/or ritualised oath”.⁶⁵¹ A good example of the ritualised oath can be found in Genesis 15, as Fretheim explains:

Jer 34:18–20 provides the only biblical analogy, where participants walked between divided animals and thereby invoked death upon themselves should they be unfaithful to the terms of the covenant. Not a regular sacrificial act...*it is a special rite for the formalization of a solemn oath or promise*, which is what “making a covenant” entails in the context (v. 18). The promise works out as a ritual event, involving both word and deed.⁶⁵²

The absoluteness of God’s promise secured by the covenant is one of the key points of Paul’s argument (cf. Gal 3:15–17). It is hence vital for Paul to introduce Abraham’s covenant-making episode at this point. In this light, the term *διαθήκη* used in 3:15 and 17 should be rendered as “covenant” rather than “will”, since a human will in the Greco-Roman legal context can easily be revoked or altered after the ratification.⁶⁵³ Moreover, it does not make sense that God made a “will” of whatever kind, since God the Father never dies. Paul’s point is that even a human covenant made by an “oath” cannot be annulled, let alone the covenant sworn by God himself.⁶⁵⁴ By rendering *διαθήκη* as “the covenanted will”, Wright obscures Paul’s point that a promise absoulitised by the covenant must be inviolable. Indeed, while Wright advocates the “covenant” as the key category that integrates Paul’s various thoughts,⁶⁵⁵ he often uses this

⁶⁵¹ Rendtorff explains this point as follows: ‘In this context [cf. Deut 7:8] the “oath” which the text talks about stands in direct proximity to the “covenant”, whose upholder God is said to be (v. 9). For through God’s faithfulness to his oath, which he proved in the deliverance from Egypt, Israel is to “know” that God is the dependable God, who keeps his covenant and remains faithful’ (1998, 64).

⁶⁵² Fretheim 1994, 446. Although some scholars dissent from this majority opinion as to the meaning of this ritual, if a first century Jew read the passage in question in the light of Jeremiah 34:18–20, it seems reasonable to suppose that he could come to the same conclusion.

⁶⁵³ Cf. Hahn 2009, 258.

⁶⁵⁴ See especially Hahn, *ibid.*, 256–62.

⁶⁵⁵ Cf. Wright 2013a, 774–83.

term as shorthand for God's single plan to rescue the world through Abraham and his family.⁶⁵⁶

However, Paul seems not use this specific term in such an abstract manner.

The second issue, closely related to the first, is the content of the Abrahamic promises. According to Wright, Paul understands the promises granted to Abraham in Genesis 15 as 'the agreement that through him God would bless the whole world, giving him a single worldwide family'.⁶⁵⁷ Wright further maintains that the word *σπέρμα* in Genesis 15 can signify "family".

It is clear that the great majority of occurrences of *σπέρμα* in the LXX are collective, so that a plural would not make sense. However, precisely because this usage is so familiar, the word comes to be used, following the gradual extension of the Hebrew *זרע* for 'family' or 'nation'...It is therefore clear that, under certain circumstance, *זרע* and its regular translation *σπέρμα* could have a new singular sense, deriving from the regular collective one, of 'family'. This, I suggest, is exactly what our passage [Galatians 3:15–18] requires if it is to make sense.⁶⁵⁸

Moreover, the *σπέρμα* in the context of Genesis 15 carries a strong universal connotation. Hence, God's promise here could signify the formation of a "single", "worldwide" family as the offspring of Abraham. In Wright's view, Paul has exactly this meaning in mind when writing Galatians 3:16: 'the promises did not say 'your families', as though referring to two or more families, but to one, 'to your family'—*hos estin Christos*, which is *Christos*. The end of the

⁶⁵⁶ Cf. Wright 2009, 48-9. He also states, 'I cannot stress too strongly, in view of persistent misunderstandings in some quarters, that, within this confluence of themes, 'covenant' and 'salvation' blong tightly together, the latter as the goal of the former, the former as the means of the latter' (Wright 2013a, 795).

⁶⁵⁷ Wright 2009, 76.

⁶⁵⁸ Wright 1991, 164. In this connection, Lee refers to different interpretations of "seed" in the Jewish hermeneutical tradition, 'It is interesting to note that Ben Sira alludes to Ps 27:8 [in Sir 44:21], and he connects it with Gen 22:17-18, just as Ps 72:17 alludes to Gen 22:18. However, while Ps 72:17 interprets the "seed" (*זרע*) as singular, referring to the ideal king of Israel, who will rule over the whole earth, Ben Sira takes the "seed" (*זרע*) to be collective, referring to the descendants of Abraham, who are destined to inherit the whole earth' (2013, 138). Cf. Wilcox 1979.

chapter should leave us in no doubt that this does not mean ‘which is the single person Jesus’, but rather ‘which is the single *Christos* in whom the people are now incorporated’.⁶⁵⁹ Wright’s proposal is, however, not without its problems. Arguably, ἐλθῆν τὸ σπέρμα in 3:19, ἐλθεῖν τὴν πίστιν in 3:23, and ἐλθούσης δὲ τῆς πίστεως in 3:25 are parallel expressions, and thus σπέρμα and πίστις in these verses should be interpreted as synonymous. Wright seems to interpret πίστις as the arrival of the Messiah Jesus, rather than God’s single family.⁶⁶⁰ In this light, it would be consistent to render σπέρμα in 3:19 in the same way.⁶⁶¹ In this connection, it must be pointed out that, in the Abrahamic narrative, the σπέρμα of Abraham is not simply the beneficiary of the Abrahamic promises, but also the agent through whom the Abrahamic promises are to be brought to the nations.

Genesis 18:18: ἐνευλογηθήσονται ἐν αὐτῷ πάντα τὰ ἔθνη τῆς γῆς.

Genesis 22:18: ἐνευλογηθήσονται ἐν τῷ σπέρματί σου πάντα τὰ ἔθνη τῆς γῆς.

Galatians 3:8: ἐνευλογηθήσονται ἐν σοὶ πάντα τὰ ἔθνη τῆς γῆς.

As Scott Hahn suggests, in Galatians 3:8, Paul might have alluded to both Genesis 18:18 and 22:18.⁶⁶² Since Christ is indeed the agent through whom the Abrahamic promises have been brought to the nations (Gal 3:14), the christological reading of σπέρμα is more appropriate. In addition to these points, it remains uncertain whether God in fact promised Abraham a non-biological, single worldwide family. Indeed, it is by no means certain whether Paul

⁶⁵⁹ Wright 2013a, 389; 2013b, 531.

⁶⁶⁰ On this point, however, Wright’s explanation is not entirely clear. Cf. Ibid., 1139.

⁶⁶¹ In fact, Wright’s interpretation has not gained wide acceptance in Pauline scholarship. See, e.g., Meyer 2009, 144-6. Hays’ view probably represents a consensus among scholars: ‘This last will promised an inheritance to Abraham and to his “seed,” which Paul identifies exclusively with Christ’ (2000, 263). See also Watson 2004, 191; Hahn 2009, 263.

⁶⁶² Hahn 2009, 246-7.

understands the Abrahamic promises in this way. Paul still believes in the physical descendants of Abraham as beneficiaries of the Abrahamic promises (cf. Rom 9:4; 11:28), which may contradict Wright's proposal. Despite such problems, Wright's interpretation of ὁ δὲ μεσίτης ἐνὸς in 3:20 as "but Moses is not the mediator of the single worldwide family" comports nicely with Paul's assertion that ὑμεῖς εἷς ἐστέ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ.⁶⁶³ Hence, Wright's reading possesses, to a certain degree, explanatory power.

Wright presents the third issue of Genesis 15 as follows: '[Paul] draws particular attention to the fact that the characteristic of this worldwide family, if its members are to be true to their founding charter, is *pistis*'.⁶⁶⁴ Wright argues that Paul mentions Abraham's "faith" not because he is the exemplar of "faith" *par excellence*,⁶⁶⁵ but rather because faith is the sole, common badge for Jews and Gentiles alike, as he explains, 'Monotheism undergirds not only election, but also the christologically redefined election: this God will justify circumcision on the basis of *pistis*, and uncircumcision through *pistis*. Same badge, different route: Jews, already covenant members, need to be freshly ratified, while Gentiles, coming from outside, need to make their entrance'.⁶⁶⁶ Wright's argument is valid, since Paul claims that *pistis* is revealed after the establishment of the Mosaic law, long after the Genesis story (Gal 3:23), although the exact meaning of *pistis* in this context remains highly controversial. In any case, the faith of Abraham foreshadows rather than defines the faith of Christian believers. The Abrahamic episode in Genesis 15 gives support to Paul's point that "faith" is the sole identity marker for Christians. It

⁶⁶³ Cf. Wright 1991, 170.

⁶⁶⁴ Wright 2013a, 861.

⁶⁶⁵ *Contra*, e.g., Kim, who maintains, 'This example of Abraham, the patriarch of God's people, clearly shows what the principle is whereby human beings can establish a proper relationship to God and become his people. It is faith' (2002, 128).

⁶⁶⁶ *Ibid.*, 848.

is therefore vital for Paul to mention Genesis 15 in order to confirm this point.

2. 5. 4 Galatians 3:10–14: Curse and blessing

Having explained the foundational place of Genesis 15 in Paul's discourse, Wright proceeds to the exegesis of 3:10–14. According to Wright, Paul continues to talk about the story of Israel. He contends that 3:10 is not based on the unstated presupposition, namely, 'No individual in fact does the whole Torah'.⁶⁶⁷ Rather, Paul simply points out the historical fact that Israel as a whole has been suffering from the curse of the covenant.⁶⁶⁸

As regards 3:11–12, Wright argues against the popular view that Paul exploits the *contradiction within the scriptures* in order to make his case.⁶⁶⁹ That is to say, it is often considered that Paul provides scriptural evidence in order to deny a particular scriptural passage with which he does not agree. Indeed, many scholars argue that Paul to some extent uses scripture *against* scripture, upholding the biblical principle of "believing" (Hab 2:4), while negating the rival biblical principle of "doing" (Lev 18:5).⁶⁷⁰ Martyn even asserts that Paul is doing so by demonising the law as a creation of mean-spirited angels.⁶⁷¹

If Paul had used the scriptures in this way, however, Paul's opponents might have counter-argued:

We can say in conclusion, then, that, being the word of the one God, the Law does not

⁶⁶⁷ Cf. Wright 1991, 144-8.

⁶⁶⁸ See our discussion in the review of James Scott in this chapter (2.3.3).

⁶⁶⁹ Cf. Schoeps 1961, 177-8.

⁶⁷⁰ E.g., Betz 1979, 147-8; Matera 1992, 121; McKnight 1995, 155.

⁶⁷¹ Martyn 1997b, 325, 357. He insists, 'On the basis of these linguistic observations alone, one could ask whether in writing Galatians Paul anticipates Marcion by suggesting that the Law did not come from the Father of Jesus Christ' (Ibid., 365).

really contradict itself. At the level of intention the text quoted by Paul [Hab 2:4] and the text quoted by us [Lv 18:5] actually say the same thing. Habakkuk's reference to life by faith is God's assurance of life to the one who faithfully observes God's commandments, as stated in Leviticus.⁶⁷²

In this case, it would have been extremely difficult for Paul to refute their argument. Even supposing that Paul wholeheartedly dissented from the alleged "work-righteousness" expressed in Leviticus 18:5, he could not deny that this verse is also "the word of the one God"! The only path Paul could have taken in this dilemma would have been to deny substantially the authority of the scriptures, since nowhere in the Jewish scriptures would he find a passage that describes the "doing" of the law as a bad thing.⁶⁷³ However, it is highly unlikely that Paul, for whatever reason, dismisses the authority of the scriptures. More important, it is questionable whether Paul opposes the "doing" *per se*, as John Barclay argues, 'This means that when Paul polemicizes against "works of the law" he is not attacking "works" as such in an attempt to divorce "believing" from "doing": the butt of his attack in this letter is "the works of the law", that is, maintaining a Jewish life-style'.⁶⁷⁴ The "scripture *against* scripture" hypothesis has a fatal flaw.

Instead, claims Wright, Paul contrasts "faith" with "law" in a temporal sense. The period when God's people were constituted by the "law" has gone, and the new era where God's people are characterised by "faith" has already dawned.⁶⁷⁵ Concerning 3:11, then, Paul understands Habakkuk 2:4 in the light of the covenant renewal foretold in Deuteronomy 30:

⁶⁷² Martyn 1997b, 330-1. Martyn argues that Paul would have expected that their rivals would say something like that.

⁶⁷³ An exceptional passage may be found in Ezekiel 20:25. Paul might have alluded to this verse, as some scholars suggest. We shall return to this point in what follows.

⁶⁷⁴ Barclay 1988, 82 [Barclay's emphasis]. Moo also maintains, 'Clear NT warnings of the necessity of putting away sin in order to gain eternal life (see also esp., Rom. 8:12-13) must not be swept under the carpet by a one-sided and unbiblical understanding of "justification by faith alone"' (2013, 363).

⁶⁷⁵ Wright 2013a, 361. Silva seems to reach the same conclusion (2001, 265). In *Habakkuk Pesher*, "faith" is construed as the faithfulness to the Teacher of Righteousness (1QpHab 8.2-3).

Paul's point, in using Habakkuk in this way, is that *when* that redefinition [of the covenant community] comes about, the demarcating characteristic of the covenant people is to be precisely their *faith*, their belief in Israel's God: and this, obviously, enables him to align Habakkuk, in his redefinition of the covenant people, with the promise to Abraham, and its initial definition of that people as 'those of faith' (3.6–9).⁶⁷⁶

As to 3:12, on the other hand, Paul's point is that the "doing" of the law cannot fulfil God's promise to Abraham concerning the single, universal family, since the "doing" of the law in fact results in the exclusion of Gentiles from the blessings of Abraham, as the Antioch incident exemplifies.⁶⁷⁷ In this way, Wright forges a close relationship between 3:6–9 and 3:11–12.⁶⁷⁸

Wright then moves to 3:13, in which we take special interest, explaining that Paul sees Jesus' death as the climax of the covenantal curse, 'For Paul, the death of Jesus, precisely on a Roman cross which symbolized so clearly the continuing subjugation of the people of God, brought the exile to a climax'.⁶⁷⁹ Wright maintains that Jesus *exhausted* or *consumed* the Deuteronomic curse on the cross.⁶⁸⁰ He goes on to argue, 'because he [Jesus] is Israel's representative, he can be the appropriate substitute, can take on himself the curse of others, so

⁶⁷⁶ Ibid., 149 [Wright's emphasis].

⁶⁷⁷ Ibid., 150. Boyarin also comments, 'because it is in the *doing* of the Law, that is, in the focus on the corporeal, that the identity of the ethnic group is marked and established' (1994, 54-5).

⁶⁷⁸ Concerning 3:12, another plausible interpretation is offered by Willitts. He states, 'Ezekiel's use of the Leviticus 18:5 clause in the retelling of the history of Israel [Ezek 20:11, 13, 21, and especially see 25] – his inner-biblical exegesis – broadens and further develops the clause's significance beyond the Pentateuch. For Ezekiel, Leviticus 18:5 does not represent the positive purpose of the covenant, as it did in the Pentateuch, but now ironically, in light of Israel's history, it comes to signify the *unrealised purpose* of the covenant within redemptive history' (2003, 113). In other words, Willitts suggests that Paul interprets, like Ezekiel, Leviticus 18:5 in the light of the ongoing history of Israel (i.e., protracted exile).

⁶⁷⁹ Ibid., 146.

⁶⁸⁰ Ibid., 151.

they do not bear it any more'.⁶⁸¹

On this specific point, however, his view is not entirely convincing. It must be remembered that Moses and David, arguably two of the most prominent “representatives” of Israel throughout its history, were not allowed to take on themselves the curse of others (cf. Exod 32:31–33; 2Sam 24:17–25; 1Chr 21:17–27). From this biblical perspective, therefore, the representative of Israel is not qualified to be a bearer of the curse falling on the people.

According to the scriptures, the only figure eligible to bear vicariously the national plague is the Isaianic suffering servant.⁶⁸² In this connection, the theology of martyrdom found in 2 Maccabees and/or 4 Maccabees shows some similarity to Paul’s way of thinking.⁶⁸³ It is hardly an accident that these texts also seem to be influenced by Isaiah 53 as well.⁶⁸⁴ Hence, whether or not Paul’s ideas are influenced by the Maccabean literature, it is more plausible that both Paul and the authors of 2 Maccabees and 4 Maccabees are inspired by the book of Isaiah. Paul’s notion that Jesus bore, or even embodied, the curse of Israel as a whole, seems to assume that what qualified Jesus to undertake this task was his identification with the Isaianic servant, not simply that he was a representative for other Jews. Although Wright repeatedly stresses the importance of Isaiah 53 as the crucial background of Paul’s soteriology,⁶⁸⁵ he remains

⁶⁸¹ Wright 2013a, 865 [Wright’s emphasis].

⁶⁸² This is not to suggest that the suffering servant is not the representative of Israel. Rather, being this representative would be the necessary condition for the assumption of this vicarious task, while being identified with the Isaianic suffering servant is a sufficient condition for undertaking this task.

⁶⁸³ The detailed study of the theology of martyrdom in these texts is beyond the scope of our research. For a detailed discussion on this topic, see, e.g., Williams 2010, 27–63. Williams’ account is, however, not without problems. For instance, he writes, ‘the author (of 4 Maccabees) states that the martyrs’ deaths purified the homeland (4Macc 17:21)’ (Ibid., 59). His statement that *death* purifies the land conflicts with the Jewish notion of purity and holiness. Moreover, he constantly describes “death” as a sacrifice to God, which also contradicts the Jewish notion of “sacrifice”. See our discussion in chapter 2, and especially chapter 3.3.2.

⁶⁸⁴ Cf. Williams, *ibid.*, 41–2.

⁶⁸⁵ E.g., Wright 2013a, 813, 850–1, and especially 1137–9. See also Wright 2013b, 302.

ambiguous as to the relationship between Galatians 3:13 and Isaiah 53. When we pursue the logic behind Galatians 3:13 from the biblical perspective, Isaiah 53 provides the most plausible theological background.

Concerning the final verse in this passage, while Wright argues that the “we” in 3:13 certainly refers to Jews, he considers that the “we” in 3:14b signifies, at least mainly, Jewish Christians:

The first half of the verse is unproblematic: getting rid of the ‘curse’ enables the Abrahamic blessing to flow to the Gentiles as always intended (3.8). But does this leave Jews themselves still under the ‘curse’? No. The Messiah opens the way for them to come into the moment of covenant renewal, the moment which Paul can evoke with a mention of Deuteronomy 30, or of Jeremiah 31, or of Ezekiel 36 or indeed of Joel 2.32. I think it probable, therefore, that the ‘we’ of 3.14b (‘that we might receive the promise of the spirit, through faith’) refers at least primarily to Jews who, by faith, come into the same new-covenant membership into which Gentiles are being welcomed.⁶⁸⁶

As we discussed above,⁶⁸⁷ Wright’s view on the “we” in 3:14b seems to fit in with the overall context. He could, however, have added Isaiah 44:1–5 and 59:21 as the crucial background texts for Paul’s statement in 3:14. Overall, Wright thinks that the central theological backbone of this passage is the Deuteronomic historical perspective, which envisions ‘the climax of the long story of God and Israel’,⁶⁸⁸ namely, the renewal of the covenant.⁶⁸⁹

⁶⁸⁶ Ibid., 867.

⁶⁸⁷ See our discussion on Scott’s view.

⁶⁸⁸ Wright 2002, 658.

⁶⁸⁹ See particularly Deuteronomy 27–30.

2. 5. 5 Galatians 3:15–4:11: The ambiguity of the law

According to Wright, throughout 3:15–4:11 Paul recounts the ambivalent role of the Mosaic law *within* and *in the light of* the history of Israel, whereby the Mosaic law involves some elements contradictory to the promise to the Abraham: ‘(a) God promised Abraham a single family, not two families; (b) the Law threatens to create two families (as was already visible in Antioch when Peter and the others withdrew from table-fellowship with uncircumcised believers)’.⁶⁹⁰ However, if the law and the promise come into conflict, the promise trumps the law. Even God’s law cannot annul the promise to Abraham, since this promise is not merely a promise but an absolute promise confirmed by God’s covenantal oath.⁶⁹¹

Nonetheless, this does not mean that the law is inherently wrong. Rather, Paul’s point is that the law is *temporal* in nature. One of the temporal roles of the law is to inform Israelites of the fact that they are sinful, which prepared them for embracing the age characterised by “faith”. Another temporal role of the law is to be *παιδαγωγός* for Israelites (Gal 3:25). As Wright explains, ‘The Torah was in fact like a babysitter, a *paidagōgos*, a role somewhat outside the repertoire of today’s western world’.⁶⁹² The termination of the period of the law results in the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise, the birth of the single, worldwide family. Wright regards Paul’s statement in 3:28–29 as the denouement of the entire chapter: ‘One! That was the point of the chapter, from 3.15 right through to 3.29; that was the key element on which so much turned, as it was the key point which Paul was most anxious to convey to Peter at Antioch and to the Galatians in writing this letter’.⁶⁹³

⁶⁹⁰ Wright 2013a, 868.

⁶⁹¹ Cf. Hahn 2009, 256-62.

⁶⁹² Wright 2013a, 874.

⁶⁹³ Ibid., 875. In line with, e.g., Dahl 1977, 109.

In 4:1–11, Paul goes on to tell the same story of Israel from a different angle, a new Exodus. In this narrative, however, the law is given a negative, antagonistic role. It “enslaves” Israel. As Wright explains, ‘The irony of this situation (sharply reflected in 4.3, where “we”, the Jewish people, had been “under the *stoicheia*”, the “elements of the world”) comes about because of the strange situation described in 3.19 and 3.22. There was nothing wrong with Torah, nothing inherently enslaving about it. But when the good Torah was given to the Israelites, it was bound to enslave them, because they were sinful’.⁶⁹⁴ In this new Exodus narrative, the law is no longer a gentle babysitter, but a dark, enslaving force, from which God’s people have escaped. Wright states, ‘For the moment we note the sharp edge of Paul’s messianic redefinition of the Jewish doctrine of election: those who belong to the Messiah are not under Torah. Jewish Messiah-believers have been redeemed from that state; Gentile Messiah-believers must not enter it’.⁶⁹⁵ By recounting the story of Israel in this way, Paul hammers home the reason why the law cannot be the true identity marker of God’s eschatological people.⁶⁹⁶

2. 5. 6 Galatians 4:21–5:1: The story of Hagar and Sarah in the light of Isaiah

In the original context, Isaiah 54:1 is most probably about the repatriation of the exiled people to the ruined city of Jerusalem. Zion once lost its children (i.e., the inhabitants), but is now filled with the returnees from Babylon. One of the formidable exegetical questions concerning Galatians 4:21–5:1 is how Paul uses this Isaianic passage in his allegorical argument. Does he

⁶⁹⁴ Ibid., 878.

⁶⁹⁵ Ibid., 878.

⁶⁹⁶ For Wright’s full account of the “story of Torah”, see *ibid.*, 505-16.

ignore its original context, and randomly connect it to the story of Sarah and Hagar?⁶⁹⁷

Wright maintains that this passage forms a sequel to the previous argument, as he states, ‘He [Paul] is continuing to talk about the actual “inheritance” of Abraham’s family, as throughout 3.1–4.7’.⁶⁹⁸ Paul is not, however, retelling the story of Sarah and Hagar in a strange way. Rather, Isaiah 54:1 functions as the hermeneutical key that informs an allegorical significance of the story of Sarah and Hagar.⁶⁹⁹ Wright explains:

Isaiah 54 speaks of the restored Jerusalem, and had already been understood in Jewish tradition in terms of Sarah, referred to explicitly in Isaiah 51.1–3. But Isaiah 54 also comes, of course, immediately after Isaiah 53, where the Servant is finally vindicated and exalted after his suffering and death. And this triumph is itself the long-awaited kingdom of YHWH: the fourth ‘servant song’ was the vision which explained the ‘gospel’ announcement in Isaiah 52.7–12.⁷⁰⁰

Wright regards the children of Sarah as representing the eschatological people of God: both Jews, who are figuratively returning from the exile, and Gentiles, who are ‘brought in from the outside’.⁷⁰¹ The children of Hagar represent, on the other hand, the people who are under the Mosaic law, under the curse of exile.⁷⁰²

Nevertheless, Wright does not think that Hagar and Sarah represent the “old” and “new”

⁶⁹⁷ Cf. Barrett 1976, 12.

⁶⁹⁸ Wright 2013a, 1134.

⁶⁹⁹ See also Willitts, who argues, ‘By way of preview, this paper asserts that commentators have interpreted the allegory in Gal 4,21–5,1 in the wrong way. It will be argued that the scriptural text Paul interprets in these verses is *not* Genesis and the Abraham story, but Isa 54 and the redemptive-historical *story of Israel*. From this observation it is concluded that the Genesis narrative is used allegorically by Paul in order to create a paradigm for his readers’ (2005, 192) [Willitts’ emphasis].

⁷⁰⁰ Wright 2013a, 1137.

⁷⁰¹ Ibid., 864.

⁷⁰² Ibid., 1139.

covenants respectively.⁷⁰³ Rather, he contends that “two covenants” should be interpreted in the light of Galatians 3: ‘here in Galatians the context of chapter 3, where the original Abrahamic covenant is expounded at length, sets up a contrast not between the old (Mosaic) covenant and its renewal but between the Abrahamic covenant, as in Genesis 15 and Galatians 3, and the Sinai covenant made through Moses’.⁷⁰⁴ We do not concur with this view, however. The thrust of Paul’s argument is not the contrast between the law (the Mosaic covenant) and the promise (the Abrahamic covenant), but the theme of the *renewal* of the covenant. Hence, we support the “old and new covenants” interpretation with four reasons below.

First, as Wright maintains, we should interpret the Genesis anecdote in the Isaianic light, but not vice versa. Then, as Wright himself stresses,⁷⁰⁵ one of the central themes of Isaiah 54 is the *renewal* of the broken covenant (cf. Isa 50:1; 54:10). The Abrahamic promise is the foundation of this covenant renewal (cf. Isa 51:2), but Deutero-Isaiah also refers to the Noahic covenant as the basis of the renewal of the covenant (cf. Isa 54:10). Moreover, as Williamson states,

[T]he Abrahamic covenant is alluded to in verses 1–3 (cf. Gen. 22:17); the Sinai covenant is picked up in verses 4–8; the Noahic covenant comes into focus in verses 9–10; and the Davidic covenant is introduced in Isaiah 55:3–4. Together this suggests that this ‘covenant of peace’ (or in the case of the next chapter, the ‘everlasting covenant’) constitutes the climactic covenant in which all the major divine-human

⁷⁰³ Concerning those who propose the “old/new” scheme, see Betz 1979, 243-6; Fee 1994, 413-6; Willitts 2004, 206; Gräbe 2006, 119; Williamson 2007, 199; Hahn 2009, 273-4; Meyer 2009, 124-37. The other popular view is that Hagar and Sarah represent the law-observant Christian mission and the law-free Christian mission, respectively. See Bligh 1970, 390-1; Barrett 1976, 13; Martyn 1985, 419; 1997, 320-2; Eastman 2007, 131-2; de Boer 2011, 287.

⁷⁰⁴ Wright 2013a, 1139. In line with Bruce 1982, 218; Hays 1989, 114; 2000, 302; Witherington 1998, 331-2.

⁷⁰⁵ Wright 2009, 199; 2013a, 1138.

covenants find their ultimate fulfilment.⁷⁰⁶

The new covenant envisaged in Isaiah 54 is the renewal and the fulfilment of all the previous covenants. If Paul is aware of the surrounding context of Isaiah 54:1, Paul would have referred to the new, not simply the Abrahamic, covenant in Galatians 4:24.

Second, while the new, everlasting covenant of peace envisaged by Deutero-Isaiah is the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise, the Mosaic covenant is also the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise. God said to Abram: “Know this for certain, that your offspring shall be aliens in a land that is not theirs, and shall be slaves there, and they shall be oppressed for four hundred years; but I will bring judgement on the nation that they serve, and afterwards they shall come out with great possessions” (Gen 15:13–14). Paul knows that this promise was fulfilled literally, which led to the establishment of the Mosaic covenant (cf. Gal 3:17; Exod 12:40–41). Both the Mosaic covenant and the new covenant are the *promised* covenants, based on the Abrahamic promises.⁷⁰⁷ Hence, it is misleading to contrast the Abrahamic with the Mosaic covenant as the contrast between the promise and the law. Rather, Paul’s attention rests on the contrast between the flesh (σάρξ) and the Spirit (πνεῦμα). The Mosaic covenant can be associated with the “flesh”, since those who were given the law were in the flesh of Adam (cf. Rom 5:12–15), whereas the new covenant is clearly associated with the outpouring of the Spirit (cf. Isa 59:21; Gal 4:14). In this connection, it should be remembered that Isaiah 54:3 seems to allude to God’s promise to Jacob in Genesis 28:14–15.⁷⁰⁸ This is the reconfirmation of the very Abrahamic promise to which Paul refers in Galatians 3:8. Paul regards the essence of this

⁷⁰⁶ Williamson 2007, 161.

⁷⁰⁷ Scholarly opinion is divided as to whether the Abrahamic covenant is singular or plural. But we shall leave this question open. Cf. Williamson 2007, 89-91.

⁷⁰⁸ See chapter 4.3.3.2(i).

Abrahamic promise as the outpouring of the Spirit (Gal 3:14). If Paul takes notice of the scriptural allusion in Isaiah 54:3,⁷⁰⁹ his point should be that the Abrahamic promise of the Spirit is now realised in the *new covenant*. Therefore, it is indeed reasonable to construe Galatians 4:21–5:1 in conjunction with 2 Corinthians 3:1–18, which contrasts the old (flesh) covenant with the new (Spirit) covenant.⁷¹⁰

Third, and closely related to the previous two points, in 4Q164, the eschatological vision described in Isaiah 54 is applied to the community.⁷¹¹ The majority of scholars, including Wright himself, conclude that the Qumran community regarded themselves as the people of the renewed covenant.⁷¹² When Paul applies Isaiah 54:1 to the Galatian Christians, he would most likely be stressing, as the Qumran community did, that they are the people of the renewed covenant, promised in the book of Isaiah.

Fourth, as discussed before, Paul carefully distinguishes “we (Jews)” from “you (Gentiles)” in his retelling of the Jewish history in Galatians 3:15–4:7.⁷¹³ However, in this allegorical and apocalyptic discourse, Paul seems to apply “we” to Gentile believers freely (Gal 4:26, 31). This point suggests that the aim of this discourse is not to expound how “you” (Gentiles) join in the history of “we” (Jews). Rather, Paul’s focus here is to depict the new reality, or even the new creation, *after* the renewal of the covenant, envisaged in Isaiah 54:1–17. In this new reality, the distinction between “we” (Jews) and “you” (Gentiles) becomes irrelevant. If this reading is maintained, the “two” covenants in 4:24 should refer to the *old* and *new*

⁷⁰⁹ It is important to note that Paul seems to allude to Genesis 28:14 in Romans 4:13. In the late Second Temple period, Genesis 28:14 was often interpreted as referring to the promise of the inheritance of the whole world. See *Jub.* 32:19; *Sir* 44:19–23.

⁷¹⁰ Pace Wright 2013a, 1139. In line with Meyer 2009, 133–4.

⁷¹¹ In 4Q164 (aQpIsa^d), Isaiah 54:11c, 12a and 12b are applied to the community. Cf. Cosgrove 1988, 82.

⁷¹² See N. T. Wright 1992, 207.

⁷¹³ See our review of James Scott above (2.3.4).

covenants.

Considering these points together, we may conclude that the thrust of this discourse is not to contrast the promise with the law, as is the case in 3:15–3:29. Rather, the central theme is the renewal of the broken covenant, which is not available to those who still stick to the “old” covenant (Gal 4:30).

2. 5. 7 Summary

Wright’s thesis is that in Galatians Paul expounds how the redemption of Jews accompanies the inclusion of Gentiles into God’s people. Wright demonstrates this point by showing that in Galatians 2–4 Paul retells the freshly revised story of Israel from various angles. Although we disagree on some exegetical points, his basic argument is convincing. Given that Paul is keen to answer the question of who are the real descendants of Abraham, the heirs of the covenantal blessings, it is well-nigh inevitable that Paul would recount the story of Israel, which begins with the story of Abraham, to make his case. Paul’s particular concern is to demonstrate that the Mosaic law, given after the promise to Abraham concerning his heir that must embrace all the nations, cannot be the decisive factor that defines the descendants of Abraham. Paul’s argument on this issue is complex and sometimes ambiguous, but it is still clear what he wishes to prove: Gentile Christians can and must be among the real descendants of Abraham without doing the works of the law. Paul thinks that the formation of God’s new people, where the old sign of the covenant (i.e., circumcision) becomes irrelevant, results in the new creation (*καὶνὴ κτίσις*).⁷¹⁴ Wright argues, ‘This [Galatians 6:15] is obviously parallel to 5.6, and elsewhere to 1

⁷¹⁴ Hays and Witherington suggest that Paul may be alluding to Isaiah 65:17–25. See Hays 1989, 159; 2000, 345; Witherington 1998, 451.

Corinthians 7.19, and the point is...that *eschatology defines election*: the “new creation” determines the identity of the single family, the “seed” promised to Abraham, and in doing so utterly relativizes the marks of circumcision, on the one hand, or any possible Gentile pride in uncircumcision, on the other’.⁷¹⁵ Wright thereby connects the theme of “new creation” with the main point of Galatians 2–4.⁷¹⁶ According to Wright, moreover, the three themes of the fulfilment of the Abrahamic promises, the new Exodus, and the new creation converge on the central theme of this epistle, namely, the formation of the eschatological people of God in the renewed covenant (Gal 4:27). The fulfilment of the Abrahamic promise must involve the inclusion of Gentiles to God’s people, since Abraham shall be a father of many nations (cf. Rom 4:18; Gen 15:5). It can be no accident that we find all these elements in Isaiah 49–55. Therefore, Wright’s argument strongly supports the structural linkage between Isaiah 49–55 and Galatians 2–4.

3. Conclusion

We have studied the works of scholars who maintain, or at least suggest, a narrative substructure beneath Paul’s various scriptural arguments in Galatians 2–4. Admittedly, none of them strongly claims that Isaiah 53 is the crucial backdrop of Galatians 3:13. Nonetheless, their arguments substantially or indirectly support our contention.

First, Hays proposes that Paul alludes to Isaiah 44:3 in Galatians 3:14. In this connection, we see that Isaiah 44:1–3 has a strong thematic connection with Isaiah 49–55, which suggests

⁷¹⁵ Wright 2013a, 1143 [Wright’s emphasis].

⁷¹⁶ While we have no space to explore the theme of “new creation” in Galatians, Morales provides an excellent research on this issue with special attention to the Isaianic influence and the eschatological hope of the divine spirit (2010, 132-63).

that the suffering servant in Isaiah 53 is virtually identical with the servant in 44:1–2. Given that this is correct, we can see the clear linkage between the suffering of the servant and the outpouring of the Spirit on the descendants of Jacob (and implicitly Abraham as well). This is exactly the narrative flow in Galatians 3:13–14. This point suggests that the Isaianic servant stands in the theological background of Galatians 3:13.

Second, in the narrative flow of Isaiah 49–55, the curse of the covenant (i.e., exile) is dissolved through the suffering and death of the servant. As Scott and Wright convincingly demonstrate, we find the same narrative pattern in Galatians 3:10–14 where Jesus himself became a curse in order to redeem those who had been under the curse of the law. Such a similarity points to a thematic tie between Isaiah 53 and Galatians 3:13.

Third, García Martínez has shown that some texts from the Qumran caves exhibit notable similarities to Paul's arguments in Galatians in terms of their theological perspectives. They share a cognate anthropological perspective (i.e., seriousness of human sinfulness), as well as a similar eschatological hope (i.e., bestowal of the divine spirit, which enables them to overcome fleshly weakness). These analogies further suggest that they share a distinctive view of the unfolding history of Israel, namely, the realisation of the end of exile is occurring in and through their communities. This bolsters the credibility of the second point mentioned above: the central theme of Galatians 3:10–14 is the termination of the covenantal curse, which results in the outpouring of the divine spirit on God's eschatological people.

Fourth, Wright demonstrates that Paul repeatedly retells the story of Israel from various angles in Galatians 2–4, a story culminating in 4:21–5:1, which describes the fulfilment of the Isaianic vision in the new covenant community. The thrust of Paul's argument is to demonstrate

that the decisive factor defining this eschatological community is Jesus the Messiah, not Torah. In this light, the strong thematic unity between Galatians 3:10–14 and 4:21–5:1 clearly emerges. Both passages contrast one group (those who are under the Mosaic covenant) with the other (the eschatological people of God). Isaiah 54:1 is understood in Galatians 4:27 as referring to the birth of the latter group, whereas Galatians 3:13 recounts how this has happened through Christ. Since the vision of Isaiah 54 is accomplished through the suffering of the servant, it is reasonable to see the connection between Galatians 3:13 and the Isaianic suffering servant.

Fifth, in Isaiah 49–55, the Abrahamic promises function as the foundation of other major Isaianic themes, such as the new Exodus, salvation for the nations, and the new creation. Moreover, the internal strife within Israel aroused by the works of the “servant” as well as the Gentile mission are also the vital themes in the series of servant poems in Isaiah 49–55. It is not likely to be a coincidence that all these themes also appear in the epistle to the Galatians. Rather, these observations strongly suggest that Isaiah 49–55 forms the crucial backbone of Paul’s argument in Galatians.

Given the cumulative force of our argument thus far for the critical influence of Isaiah 49–55 on the epistle to the Galatians, Hays’ suggestion that the word *ἀκοή* in Galatians 3:2 and 3:5 denotes the Isaianic gospel is plausible. Although Galatians 4:27 contains the sole direct quotation from Isaiah, this prophetic book is essential to Paul’s arguments in this epistle.⁷¹⁷ Since Paul’s gospel proclaimed in Galatia is fundamentally rooted in the Isaianic gospel, the Isaianic influence extensively permeates Paul’s various arguments. We therefore conclude that Isaiah 53 is the crucial theological backdrop of Galatians 3:13.

⁷¹⁷ In addition to 4:27, there are some allusions to the second servant poem (Isa 49:1–13), which applies to Paul himself (cf. Gal 1:15, 16; 2:2; 4:11).

4. Further implications

The conclusion mentioned above has two implications for our understanding of Paul's soteriology. First, the term *κατάρα* in Galatians 3:13 should not be categorised as a sacrificial term. Paul's aim here is not, as is the case of Romans 3:25, to explain Jesus' death by an analogy with a sacrificial animal. Rather, Paul uses this term with covenantal as well as historical perspectives in mind. This point may reflect Paul's profound sense of history and a deep understanding of the relationship between sacrifice and the covenant. Since Paul is aware of the fact that usual sacrificial means are not effective to retrieve the broken covenant, he alludes to a different theme in the Jewish Bible, namely, the Isaianic suffering servant.

Second, and related to the first point, while the crucifixion of the Messiah is an earth-shaking event for Paul (cf. Gal 6:14), this does not mean that Jewish history prior to the Christ event is irrelevant for his grasp of the significance of Jesus' death. On the contrary, Paul understands one of the crucial aspects of Jesus' death to be the redemption of Jews from their plight, namely, the Mosaic covenantal curse. This is exactly the task of the Isaianic servant, that is, to redeem Zion from her plight of the exile. Moreover, Paul recognises that Jesus' death opens up a way to fulfil another task of the servant, namely, to be a light of the nations (Isa 49:6; Rom 2:19; 15:9). Indeed, Paul sees himself as an apostle of Jesus the Messiah to complete the second vocation of the servant (cf. Rom 15:16). This further indicates that Paul's soteriology involves a *narrative* element, in which the history of Jews has reached, and is still advancing to, its appropriate goal and climax.

Chapter 6: Conclusion

The basic question driving this study is whether or not Paul's use of sacrificial imagery reflects a consistent understanding of Jewish sacrificial practices and some of the key ideas behind them. We posit that a covenant model provides a sufficient framework through which we can find a coherence of thought in Paul's use of sacrificial motifs and ideas. As test cases, we examined the three passages (1Cor 5:7; Rom 3:25; Gal 3:13) that relate to the three Jewish themes of Passover, Yom Kippur, and the Isaianic suffering servant. Admittedly, this investigation has not covered all the soteriological statements that involve sacrificial imagery (e.g., Romans 8:3). Despite this limitation, however, we suggest that the covenant model we propose has considerable explanatory power. Paul invokes and employs the three Jewish themes within the larger framework of God's covenant with his people.

Passover is the celebration of God's faithfulness to his covenantal promises, which was confirmed by the Exodus event in the past (cf. Gen 15:13–14; Exod 2:24). Paul proclaims that the God of Israel continues to be faithful to his covenantal promises. This is now manifested through Jesus, the Messiah of Israel (e.g., Rom 15:8; 2Cor 1:18–20; Gal 3:8). For Paul, the Exodus story provides several important motifs and themes that illuminate what the Christ event accomplished. The term *πάσχα* is one such example. Indeed, when Paul uses this term in 1 Corinthians 5:7, he does not merely intend to refer to the lamb that is slaughtered and consumed on the Passover night. Rather, he exploits the evocative power of the word *πάσχα* to allude to the whole Exodus narrative. Paul thereby expects his addressees to recall the Exodus story in a

christological light.⁷¹⁸

For first century Jews, the primary purpose of observing the Passover feast was not only to *remember* the Passover event in the past, but also to *participate in* the whole Exodus story through the repetition of its key events. Thus, when Paul refers to *πάσχα*, he attempts to remind his addressees that they presently celebrate the feast of Unleavened Bread in purity, which itself is the repetition of one of the Passover events (cf. Exod 12:14–22, 39; 13:6–10). Moreover, they are now to imagine themselves on the new Exodus journey through the wilderness, advancing to the ultimate promised land.

As regards the words *ἱλαστήριον* and *αἷμα* in Romans 3:25, we stressed the centrality of “blood”, which is closely associated with “life”, in the process of Jewish blood sacrifices. The idea of “life-blood” that accomplishes both purification and propitiation is especially prominent in the Yom Kippur rite. From this vantage point, we challenged the conventional view that the word *αἷμα* in Pauline terminology is merely a metonym for Christ’s death. Rather, by mentioning the blood of Christ in a concrete sense, Paul draws an analogy between the Jewish blood sacrifice, in particular on Yom Kippur, and the *life*-offering of Christ. Paul, in other words, evokes the Yom Kippur blood ritual by referring to the place of the atonement (*ἱλαστήριον*) and to the blood-sacrifice itself.

For many first century Jews, Yom Kippur was the most important day for the maintenance of the covenant with their God. By observing Yom Kippur, the covenant relationship between God and Israel was confirmed and cemented through the annual forgiveness and purification of

⁷¹⁸ *Contra* Bultmann, who maintains, ‘The Christian proclamation cannot and may not remind hearers that God led their fathers out of Egypt, that he once led the people into captivity and brought them back again into the land of Promise, that he restored Jerusalem and the Temple, and so on. Israel’s history is not our history, and in so far as God has shown his grace in that history, such grace is not meant for us’ (1963, 31).

sins and impurities. Paul, however, believes that God's covenant is now expanded in the Messiah to include Gentiles. In this renewed covenant, the Christian community is seen as the Temple as well as "a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God" (Rom 12:1; cf. Rom 15:16). This implies that Paul sees that the renewed covenant entails the renewed sacrificial system, although 'Paul does not have a systematically-worked-out and harmonized theory according to which the rites of the Bible are transferred to the Christian community, nor does his Temple have a specific physical location'.⁷¹⁹ The Christ event lies at the heart of this renewed sacrificial system. For the sake of God's people in this expanded covenant, the ultimate Yom Kippur sacrifice, which justifies, sanctifies, and sustains God's covenant people to the end, must be offered. To Paul, thus, Yom Kippur would have been an ideal motif to stress the unbreakable tie between God and the renewed covenant people (cf. Rom 8:35).

The word *κατάρα* in Galatians 3:13 also makes sense within the larger covenantal framework, though it focuses on the negative side of the covenant, the curse as the punishment for the covenantal breach. A certain reading of Deuteronomy suggests that the Mosaic covenant can be fractured beyond the point of no return, which brings down the series of enduring covenantal curses. The most severe curse (i.e., the exile) is triggered by the accumulation of certain grave sins such as idolatry. Significantly, the ordinary sacrificial means for maintaining the covenant play no role in *terminating* the curse. The people, bound by the covenantal oath, must endure the curse as a necessary condition for its termination. The suffering of the servant in Isaiah 53 is to be understood in this covenantal context: he bore the sins and suffered punishment in full measure in order to terminate the covenantal curse that had fallen on the

⁷¹⁹ Newton 1985, 53.

covenant people. We argued that Paul's usage of *κατάρα* should be interpreted against this Isaianic backdrop. Jesus the Messiah of Israel as the suffering servant suffered punishment on behalf of the people in order to redeem those who were under the curse of the law (i.e., Jews). From Paul's point of view, this act of Jesus led to the renewal of the covenant for Jews and to the inclusion of Gentiles into this renewed covenant. Paul's intention to use the term *κατάρα* is not to evoke the image of a sacrificial animal. Rather, Paul's adoption of this term reflects his perception that Jews had been kept under the covenantal curse. Paul, in line with the Isaianic thought, views the suffering of the righteous person (i.e., Jesus) as the means of restoring the fractured covenant.

In conclusion, Paul's use of the three themes noted throughout the study reflects his understanding of the relationship between sacrifice, curse, and the covenant. Paul recognises that Jewish sacrificial practices have multiple purposes. At the same time, they are deeply rooted in the idea of the covenant. For instance, at the heart of the Passover feast lies the celebration of God's covenantal faithfulness, which was manifested in the Exodus event. Paul uses the paschal motif with this point in mind. Paul, on the other hand, is well aware of the distinction between what sacrificial practices can achieve (i.e., the maintenance of the covenant relationship) and what they cannot (e.g., the termination of the covenantal curse). Hence, Paul uses both sacrificial and non-sacrificial terms tactically in his accounts of the multifaceted significance of the Christ event. Moreover, Paul carefully weaves these terms into his symbolic *narrative* world. Indeed, Paul's gospel is the *retelling of the Isaianic story*, which envisions the redemption of Israel, humanity, and the whole created order.

Bibliography

1. Bible

Biblia Hebraica Stuttgartensia. 1987. Edited by K. Elliger and W. Rudolph. Stuttgart: Deutsche Bibelgesellschaft.

Septuaginta: Id est Vetus Testamentum graece iuxta LXX interpretes. 2006. Edited by Alfred Rahlfs. Rev. ed. Stuttgart: Deutsche Bibelgesellschaft.

Novum Testamentum Graece. 2012. Based on the work of Ebrhard and Erwin Nestle. Edited by Barbara and Kurt Aland, Johannes Karavidopoulos, Carlo M. Martini, Bruce M. Metzger. 28th rev. ed. Stuttgart: Deutsche Bibelgesellschaft.

The New Oxford Annotated Bible: New Revised Standard Version with the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books. 2001. Edited by Michael D. Coogan. 3rd ed. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press.

A New English Translation of the Septuagint. 2007. Edited by Albert Pietersma and Benjamin G. Wright. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Isaias (Septuaginta). 1983. Edited by Joseph Ziegler. 3rd ed. *Vetus Testamentum Graecum/ auctoritate Acad. Scientiarum* 14. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.

Susanna; Daniel; Bel et Draco (Septuaginta). 1999. Edited by Joseph Ziegler. *Vetus Testamentum Graecum/ auctoritate Acad. Scientiarum* 16.2. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.

The Isaiah Targum. 1987. *The Aramaic Bible* 11. Introduction, Translation, Apparatus and Notes by Bruce D. Chilton. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.

2. Jewish and early Christian Literature

2. 1 General Collections

Charlesworth, J. H. 1983-1985. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*. 2 vols. Garden City. N.Y.: Doubleday.

Charlesworth, J. H., et al. 1994-2011. *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek Texts with English Translations*. 10 vols. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

Martínez, Florentino García. 1996. *The Dead Sea Scrolls Translated: The Qumran Texts in English*. Translated by Wilfred G. E. Watson. 2nd ed. Leiden: E. J. Brill.

Vermes, Geza. 1997. *The Complete Dead Sea Scrolls in English*. Com. ed. Allen Lane: Penguin Press.

Wise, Michael., Martin Abegg, Jr., and Edward Cook. 1996. *The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation*. London; San Francisco: HarperSanFrancisco.

2. 2 According to Titles

1 Enoch

Nickelsburg, George W. E., and James C. VanderKam. 2004. *1 Enoch: A New Translation*. Minneapolis: Fortress.

2 Baruch

Klijn, A. F. J. 1983. 2 (Syriac Apocalypse of) Baruch: A New Translation and Introduction. Pages 1.616-652. in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*. Edited by James H. Charlesworth. 2 vols. London: Darton Longman & Todd.

4 Maccabees

DeSilva, David A. 2006. *4 Maccabees: Introduction and Commentary on the Greek Text in Codex Sinaiticus*. Septuagint Commentary Series. Leiden: Brill.

Ambrose

Beyenka, Mary Melchior. 1954. *Saint Ambrose: Letters*. The Fathers of the Church 26. Washington, D. C.: The Catholic University of America Press.

Augustine

Augustine, 1997-1999. *Answer to the Pelagians. introduction, translation, and notes*, Roland J. Teske. 4 vols. Hyde Park, N.Y.: New City Press.

The Epistle of Barnabas

Kleist, James A. 1948. The Epistle of Barnabas. Pages 27-65. in *The Didache*. Ancient Christian Writers 6. New York: The Newman Press.

Josephus

Josephus. 1926-1965. Translated by H. St. J. Thackeray. et al. 10 vols. LCL. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

Jubilees

Wintermute, O. S. 1985. Jubilees: A New Translation and Introduction. Pages 2:35-142. in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*. Edited by James H. Charlesworth. 2 vols. London: Darton Longman & Todd.

Justin

St. Justin Martyr. 2003. *Dialogue with Trypho*. Translated by Thomas B. Falls. Revised and with a New Introduction by Thomas P. Halton. Edited by Michael Slusser. Washington, D.C.: The Catholic University of America Press.

Melchizedek (11Q13=11QMelch)

Roberts, J. J. M. 2002. Melchizedek (11Q13=11QMelchizedek=11QMelch). Pages 6B: 264-273 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek Texts with English Translations*. Edited by James H. Charlesworth. et al. 10 vols. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

Mishnah

Danby, Herbert. 1933. *The Mishnah: Translated from the Hebrew with Introduction and Brief Explanatory Notes*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Origen

Barkley, Gary Wayne. 1990. *Homilies on Leviticus 1–16*. The Fathers of the Church 83. Washington, D. C.: The Catholic University of America Press.

Philo

Philo. 1929-1962. Translated by Colson, F. H., G. H. Whitaker, and R. Marcus. London: Heinemann.

Psalms of Solomon

Wright, R. B. 2007. *The Psalms of Solomon: A Critical Edition of the Greek Text*. Edited by R. B. Wright. Jewish and Christian Texts in Contexts and related Studies 1. London: T & T Clark.

Pseudo-Philo

Harrington, D. J. 1985. Pseudo-Philo: A New Translation and Introduction. Pages 2. 297-377-142. in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha* Edited by James H. Charlesworth. 2 vols. London: Darton Longman & Todd.

Rule of the Community

Qimron, Elisha and James H. Charlesworth 1994. Rule of Community (1QS; cf. 4QS MSS A-J, 5Q1) Pages 1. 1-51 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek Texts with English Translations*. Edited by James H. Charlesworth. et al. 10 vols. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

Sifre

Reuven Hammer. 1986. *Sifre: A Tannaitic Commentary on the Book of Deuteronomy*. Yale Judaica Series 24. New Haven: Yale University Press.

Tertullian

Coxe, A. Cleveland. 1996. *Latin Christianity: Its Founder, Tertullian. I. Apologetic; II. Anti-Marcion; III. Ethical.* The Ante-Nicene Fathers: Translations of the Writing of the Fathers down to A. D. 325. 3. Edinburgh: T&T Clark ; Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans.

Thanksgiving Scroll

Discoveries in the Judean Desert. XL: 1QHODAYOT^a with incorporation of 1QHODAYOT^b and 4QHODAYOT^{a-f}. 2009. Edited by Hartmut Stegemann and Eileen Schuller. Translated by Carol Newson. In consultation with James VanderKam and Monical Brady. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

3. Dictionary

Balz, Horst and Gerhard Schneider. ed. 1990. *Exegetical Dictionary of the New Testament*.
3 vols. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Botterweck, G. Johannes and Helmer Ringgren. ed. 1974-2006. *Theological Dictionary of the Old Testament*. 15 vols. Translated and Edited by John T. Willis. et al. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Kittel, Gerhard. ed. 1964-1976. *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. 10 vols.
Translated and Edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Muraoka, T. 2009. *A Greek-English Lexicon of the Septuagint*. Louvain: Peeters.

4. Secondary Literature

- Abegg, Martin G. 1997. Exile and the Dead Sea Scrolls. Pages 111-125 in *Exile: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Conceptions*. Edited by James M. Scott. Supplements to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 56. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2006. Paul and James on the Law in Light of the Dead Sea Scrolls. Pages 63-74 in *Christian Beginnings and the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Edited by John J. Collins and Craig A. Evans. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.
- Ackroyd, Peter R. 1968. *Exile and Restoration*. London: SCM.
- Andersen, Francis I. and David Noel Freedman. 2000. *Micah*. Anchor Bible 24E. New York: Doubleday.
- Anderson, Bernhard W. 1962. Exodus Typology in Second Isaiah. Pages 177-195 in *Israel's Prophetic Heritage: Essays in Honor of James Muilenburg*. Edited by B. W. Anderson and W. Harrelson. London: SCM.
- _____. 1967. *Creation versus Chaos: The Reinterpretation of Mythical Symbolism in the Bible*. New York: Association Press.
- Arzt-Grabner, Peter., Ruth Elisabeth Kritzer, Amphilochios Papathomas and Franz Winter 2006. *I. Korinther*. Mit zwei Beiträgen von Michael Ernst, unter Mitarbeit von Günther Schwab und Andreas Bammer. Papyrologische Kommentare zum Neuen Testament; Bd. 2. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- Aytoun, Robert A. 1922. The Servant of the Lord in the Targum. *Journal of Theological Studies* 23. 172-180.
- Bacchiocchi, Samuele. 1986. Sabbatical Typologies of Messianic Redemption. *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 17. 153-176.

- Bachmann, Philipp. 1909. *Der zweite Brief des Paulus an die Korinther*. Kommentar zum Neuen Testament 8. Leipzig: Deichert.
- Bailey, Daniel P. 1999. Jesus as the Mercy Seat: The Semantics and Theology of Paul's Use of *Hilasterion* in Romans 3:25. Ph. D. diss., University of Cambridge.
- _____. 2000. Jesus as the Mercy Seat: The Semantics and Theology of Paul's Use of *Hilasterion* in Romans 3:25. *Tyndale Bulletin* 51. 155-158.
- Baltzer, Klaus. 2001. *Deutero-Isaiah: a commentary on Isaiah 40-55*. Translated by Margaret Kohl; Edited by Peter Machinist. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- Barclay, John M. G. 1987. Mirror-Reading a Polemical Letter: Galatians as a Test Case. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 31. 73-93.
- _____. 1988. *Obeying the Truth: A Study of Paul's Ethics in Galatians*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 1996. *Jews in the Mediterranean Diaspora: From Alexander to Trajan (326 BCE–117 CE)*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 2011. *Pauline Churches and Diaspora Jews*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 275. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Barrett, C. K. 1957. *A Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. London: A & C Black.
- _____. 1958. Luke XXII. 15: To Eat the Passover. *Journal of Theological Studies* 9. 305-307.
- _____. 1971. *A Commentary on the First Epistle to the Corinthians*. 2nd ed. London: A & C Black.
- _____. 1973. *A Commentary on the Second Epistle to the Corinthians*. London: A & C Black.

- _____. 1976. The Allegory of Abraham, Sarah, and Hagar in the Argument in Galatians. Pages 1-16 in *Rechtfertigung: Festschrift für Ernst Käsemann zum 70. Geburtstag*. herausgegeben von Johannes Friedrich, Wolfgang Pöhlmann, und Peter Stulmacher. Tübingen: Mohr; Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- _____. 1985. *Freedom and Obligation: A Study of the Epistle to the Galatians*. London: SPCK.
- Bauckham, Richard. 1993. *The Theology of the Book of Revelation*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- _____. 2005. James, Peter, and the Gentiles. Pages 91-142 in *The Missions of James, Peter, and Paul: Tensions in Early Christianity*. Edited by Bruce Chilton and Craig Evans. Supplements to Novum Testamentum 115. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2006. *Jesus and the eyewitnesses: The Gospels as eyewitness testimony*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2008a. *Jesus and the God of Israel: God crucified and other studies on the New Testament's Christology of divine identity*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2008b. *The Jewish World around the New Testament: Collected Essays I*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 233. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- _____. 2011. *Jesus: A Very Short Introduction*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Beale, G. K. 1989. The Old Testament Background of Reconciliation in 2 Corinthians 5–7 and its Bearing on the Literary Problem of 2 Corinthians 6.14–7.1. *New Testament Studies* 35. 550–581.
- Beckwith, Roger T. 2005. *Calendar, Chronology and Worship: Studies in Ancient Judaism and Early Christianity*. Ancient Judaism and Early Christianity 61. Leiden; Boston: Brill.

- Behm, J. 1964. “αἷμα, αἱματεχυσία.” Pages 172-7 in vol. 1 of *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. Edited by G. Kittel. Translated and Edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Beker, J. Christiaan. 1980. *Paul the Apostle: The Triumph of God in Life and Thought*. Philadelphia: Fortress.
- Berkley, Timothy W. 2000. *From a Broken Covenant to Circumcision of the Heart: Pauline Intertextual Exegesis in Romans 2:17-29*. Atlanta, Ga.: Society of Biblical Literature.
- Betz, Hans Dieter. 1979. *Galatians: A Commentary on Paul's Letter to the Churches in Galatia*. Philadelphia: Fortress.
- Betz, Otto. 1998. Jesus and Isaiah 53. Pages 70-87 in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa.: Trinity Press International.
- Beuken, W. A. M. 1973. Jes 50 10–11: Eine kultische Paränese zur dritten Ebedprophetie. *Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 85. 168-182.
- _____. 1989. Servant and Herald of Good Tidings. Isaiah 61 as an Interpretation of Isaiah 40–55. Pages 411-442 in *The Book of Isaiah : Le livre d'Isaïe: les oracles et leurs relectures: unité et complexité de l'ouvrage*. Bibliotheca Ephemeridum Theologicarum Lovaniensium 81. Par Jacques Vermeulen. Leuven : Leuven University Press.
- Bird, Michael F. 2006. *The Saving Righteousness of God: Studies on Paul, Justification and the New Perspective*. Milton Keynes: Paternoster.
- Blenkinsopp, Joseph. 1966. Scope and Depth of the Exodus Tradition in Deutero-Isaiah, 40-55. *Concilium* 20. 22-26.

- _____. 1997. The Servant and the Servants in Isaiah and the Formation of the Book. Pages 155-175 in *Writing and Reading the Scroll of Isaiah: Studies of an Interpretive Tradition*. 2 vols. Edited by Craig C. Broyles and Craig A. Evans. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2000-2003. *Isaiah*. 3 vols. Anchor Bible 19-19B. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.
- _____. 2006. *Opening the Sealed Book: Interpretations of the Book of Isaiah in Late Antiquity*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Bligh, John. 1969. *Galatians*. Householder Commentaries 1. London: St Paul publications.
- Bockmuehl, Markus. 1990. *Revelation and Mystery in Ancient Judaism and Pauline Christianity*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Boer, Martinus C. de. 1989. Paul and Jewish Apocalyptic Eschatology. Pages 169-190 in *Apocalyptic and the New Testament: Essays in Honor of J. Louis Martyn*. Edited by Joel Marcus and Marion L. Soards. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 24. Sheffield: Sheffield University Press.
- _____. 2011. *Galatians: A Commentary*. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- _____. 2012. Salvation History in Galatians? A Response to Bruce W. Longenecker and Jason Maston. *Journal for the Study of Paul and his Letters*. 2.2. 105-114.
- Boyarín, Daniel. 1994. *A radical Jew: Paul and the politics of identity*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Brondos, David A. 2006. *Paul on the Cross: reconstructing the apostle's story of redemption*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- Brown, Michael L. 2012. Jewish Interpretations of Isaiah 53. Pages 61-83 in *The Gospel According to Isaiah 53: Encountering the Suffering Servant in Jewish and Christian Theology*. Edited by Darrell L. Bock and Mitch Glaser. Grand Rapids: Kregel.

- Bruce, F. F. 1963. *Romans: An Introduction and Commentary*. London: Inter-Varsity.
- _____. 1969. *New Testament History*. London: Oliphants.
- _____. 1971. *1 and 2 Corinthians*. London: Oliphants.
- _____. 1982. *The Epistle to the Galatians: A Commentary on the Greek Text*. Exeter: Paternoster Press.
- _____. 1988. *The Canon of Scripture*. Glasgow: Chapter House.
- Brueggemann, Walter. 1998. *Isaiah 40–66*. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- Buchanan, George Wesley. 1970. *The Consequences of the Covenant*. Supplement to Novum Testamentum 20. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- Büchler, A. 1928. *Studies in Sin and Atonement in the Rabbinic Literature of the First Century*. Jews' College Publications 11. London: Oxford University Press.
- Bultmann, Rudolf. 1952-1955. *Theology of the New Testament*. 2 vols. Translated by Kendrick Grobel. London: SCM.
- _____. 1956. *Primitive Christianity in its Contemporary Setting*. Translated by R. H. Fuller. London: Thames and Hudson.
- _____. 1963. *The History of the Synoptic Tradition*. Translated by John Marsh. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- _____. 1964. The Significance of the Old Testament for the Christian Faith. Pages 8-35 in *The Old Testament and Christian Faith: Essays by Rudolf Bultmann and others*. Edited by Bernhard W. Anderson. London: SCM.
- _____. 1970. *Theologie des Neuen Testaments*. Berlin: Evangelische Verlagsanstalt.

- _____. 1985. *The Second Letter to the Corinthians*. Translated by Roy A. Harrisville. Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House.
- Burrows, Millar. 1956. *The Dead Sea Scrolls*. London: Secker & Warburg.
- _____. 1958. *More Light on the Dead Sea Scrolls*. London: Secker & Warburg.
- Burton, Ernest D. 1921. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Galatians*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.
- Byron, John. 2003. *Slavery Metaphors in Early Judaism and Pauline Christianity*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 162. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Calvin, John. 1950. *Commentaries on the Four Last Books of Moses*. 4 vols. Translated by Charles William Bingham. Grand Rapids: Michigan.
- Campbell, Douglas Atchison. 1992. *The Rhetoric of Righteousness in Romans 3.21-26*. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 65. Sheffield: JSOT Press.
- _____. 2002. The Story of Jesus in Romans and Galatians. Pages 97-124 in *Narrative Dynamics in Paul: A Critical Assessment*. Edited by Bruce W. Longenecker. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- _____. 2005. *The Quest for Paul's Gospel: A Suggested Strategy*. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 274. London: T & T Clark International.
- _____. 2009. *Deliverance of God: An Apocalyptic Rereading of Justification in Paul*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Childs, Brevard S. 2001. *Isaiah*. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.

- _____. 2004. *The Struggle to Understand Isaiah as Christian Scripture*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Chilton, Bruce D. 1983. *The Glory of Israel: The Theology and Provenance of the Isaiah Targum*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 23: Sheffield: JSOT Press.
- Christensen, Duane L. 2001-2002. *Deuteronomy*. 2 vols. Word Biblical Commentary 6A-B. Nashville: Thomas Nelson. Christiansen, Ellen Juhl.
- Christiansen, Ellen Juhl. 1995. *The Covenant in Judaism and Paul: A Study of Ritual Boundaries as Identity Makers*. Arbeiten zur Geschichte des Antiken Judentums und des Urchristentums 27. Leiden: Brill.
- Ciampa, Roy E. 2012. "She Must and Shall Go Free: Paul's Isaianic Gospel in Galatians: A Review Article." (review of Matthew S. Harmon. BZNW 168. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 2010) *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 55. 199-202.
- Ciampa, Roy E. and Brian S. Rosner. 2010. *The First Letter to the Corinthians*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Clements, R. E. 1965. *God and Temple*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- _____. 1998. Isaiah and the Restoration of Israel Pages 39-54 in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa: Trinity Press International.
- Collins, Adela Yarbo. 1998. Finding Meaning in the Death of Jesus. *The Journal of Religion* 78. 175-196.
- Collins, John J. 1974. The Son of Man and the Saints of the Most High in the Book of Daniel. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 93. 50-66.

- _____. 1981. *Daniel, First Maccabees, Second Maccabees with an Excursus on the Apocalyptic Genre*. Old Testament Message 16. Wilmington, Delaware: Glazier.
- _____. 1993. *Daniel: A Commentary on the Book of Daniel; with an essay, "The Influence of Daniel on the New Testament," by Adela Yarbro Collins*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 1997a. *Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls*. London; New York: Routledge.
- _____. 1997b. A Herald of Good Tidings: Isaiah 61:1–3 and its actualization in the Dead Sea Scrolls. Pages 225-240 in *The Quest for Context and Meaning: Studies in Biblical Intertextuality in Honor of James A. Sanders*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and Shemaryahu Talmon. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 1998 [1984]. *The Apocalyptic Imagination: An Introduction to Jewish Apocalyptic Literature*. 2d ed. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2000. The Exodus and Biblical Theology. Pages 247-261 in *Jews, Christians, and the Theology of the Hebrew Scriptures*. Edited by Alice Ogden Bellis and Joel S. Kaminsky. Atlanta, Ga.: Society of Biblical literature.
- _____. 2006. A Messiah before Jesus? Pages 15-35 in *Christian Beginnings and the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Edited by John J. Collins and Craig A. Evans. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.
- _____. 2010 [1995]. *The Scepter and the Star: Messianism in Light of the Dead Sea Scrolls*. 2d ed. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Cosgrove, Charles H. 1988. *The Cross and the Spirit: A Study in the Argument and Theology of Galatians*. Macon, Ga.: Mercer University Press.
- Craigie, Peter C. 1976. *The Book of Deuteronomy*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Cranfield, C. E. B. 1975-1979. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. 2 vols. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.

- _____. 1985. *Romans: A Shorter Commentary*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 1998. *On Romans and Other New Testament Essays*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- Cross, Frank Moore. 1973. *Canaanite Myth and Hebrew Epic: Essays in the History of the Religion of Israel*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press.
- _____. 1998. *From Epic to Canon: History and Literature in Ancient Israel*. Baltimore: The John Hopkins University Press.
- Dahl, Nils Alstrup. 1977. *Studies in Paul: Theology for the Early Christian Mission*. Assisted by Paul Donahue. Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House.
- Daube, David. 1963. *The Exodus Pattern in the Bible*. London: Faber and Faber.
- Davidson, A. B. 1904. *The Theology of the Old Testament*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.
- Davies, William David. 1962. *Christian Origins and Judaism*. Darton, Longman & Todd: London.
- _____. 1967. *Invitation to the New Testament: A guide to its main Witnesses*. London: SPCK.
- _____. 1977. Paul and the People of Israel. *New Testament Studies* 24. 4-39.
- _____. 1980 [1948]. *Paul and Rabbinic Judaism: Some Rabbinic Elements in Pauline Theology*. 4th ed.; Philadelphia. Fortress.
- _____. 1984. *Jewish and Pauline Studies*. London: SPCK.
- _____. 1997. Paul and the New Exodus. Pages 443-463 in *The Quest for Context and Meaning: Studies in Biblical Intertextuality in Honor of James A. Sanders*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and Shemaryahu Talmon. Leiden: Brill.

Deissmann, G. Adolf. 1903. *Bible Studies: contributions chiefly from papyri and inscriptions to history of the language, the literature, and the religion of Hellenistic Judaism and Primitive Christianity*. Translated by Alexander Grieve. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.

Delling, Gerhard. 1971. “στοιχεῖον.” Pages 670-87 in vol. 7 of *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. Edited by Gerhard Friedrich. Translated and Edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Dodd, C. H. 1932. *The Epistle of Paul to the Romans*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

_____. 1935. *The Bible and the Greeks*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

_____. 1952. *According to the Scriptures*. London: Lowe & Brydone.

Douglas, Mary. 1984 [1966]. *Purity and Danger: An Analysis of the Concepts of Pollution and Taboo*. London: Ark Paperbacks.

_____. 1993. *In the Wilderness: The Doctrine of Defilement in the Book of Numbers*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 158. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.

_____. 1999. *Leviticus as Literature*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Dozeman, Thomas B. 1998. The Book of Numbers: Introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 1-268 in vol. 2 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.

Duhm, Bernard. 1892. *Das Buch Jesaja*. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.

Dumbrell, William J. 1984. *Covenant and Creation: A Theology of Old Testament Covenants*. Exeter: Paternoster.

- _____. 2004. Paul and Salvation History in Romans 9:30–10:4. Pages 286-312 in *Out of Egypt: Biblical Theology and Biblical Interpretation*. The Scripture and Hermeneutics Series 5. Edited by Craig Bartholomew, Mary Healy, Karl Möller and Robin Parry. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.
- Dunn, James D. G. 1970. *Baptism in the Spirit: A Re-examination of the New Testament Teaching on the Gift of the Spirit in relation to Pentecostalism today*. Study in Biblical Theology: Second Series 15. London: SCM.
- _____. 1985. Works of the Law and the Curse of the Law (Galatians 3.10-14). *New Testament Studies* 31. 523-542.
- _____. 1988. *Romans*. 2 vols. Word Biblical Commentary 38. Dallas: Word.
- _____. 1990. *Jesus, Paul and the Law: Studies in Mark and Galatians*. London: SPCK.
- _____. 1991a. Paul's Understanding of the Death of Jesus as Sacrifice. Pages 35-56 in *Sacrifice and Redemption: Durham Essays in Theology*. Edited by S. W. Sykes. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- _____. 1991b. The Theology of Galatians: The Issue of Covenant Nomism. Pages 125-146 in *Pauline Theology Volume I: Thessalonians, Philippians, Galatians, Philemon*. Edited by Jouette M. Bassler. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 1993. *A Commentary on the Epistle to the Galatians*. Black's New Testament Commentary 9. London: A. C. Black.
- _____. 1998. *The Theology of Paul the Apostle*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 2005. *The New Perspective on Paul*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 185. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

- Eastman, Susan. 2007. *Recovering Paul's Mother Tongue: Language and Theology in Galatians*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2010. Israel and Divine Mercy in Galatians and Romans. Pages 147-170 in *Between Gospel and Election: Explorations in the Interpretation of Romans 9–11*. Edited by Florian Wilk and J. Ross Wagner with the assistance of Frank Schleritt. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Eberhart Christian A. 2011a. Sacrifice? Holy Smokes! Reflections on Cult Terminology. Pages 17-32 in *Ritual and Metaphor: Sacrifice in the Bible*. Edited by Christian A. Eberhart. Resources for biblical study 68. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.
- _____. 2011b. *The Sacrifice of Jesus: Understanding Atonement Biblically*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- Eco, Umberto. 1976. *A Theory of Semiotics*. Bloomington; London: Indiana University Press.
- Eichrodt, Walther. 1961-1967. *Theology of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Translated by J. A. Baker. London: SCM.
- _____. 1970. Prophet and Covenant: Observations on the Exegesis of Isaiah. Pages 167-188 in *Proclamation and Presence: Old Testament Essays in Honour of Gwynne Henton Davies*. Edited by John I. Durham and J. R. Porter. London: SCM.
- Ekblad, Eugene Robert. 1999. *Isaiah's Servant Poems According to the Septuagint: An Exegetical and Theological Study*. Contributions to Biblical Exegesis and Theology 23. Leuven: Peeters.
- Ellis, Edward Earle. 1957. *Paul's use of the Old Testament*. Edinburgh: Oliver and Boyd.
- Enns, Peter. 2000. *Exodus*. The NIV Application Commentary 2. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

- Evans, Craig A. 1995. *Jesus and his Contemporaries: Comparative Studies*. Arbeiten zur Geschichte des antiken Judentums und des Urchristentums 25. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 1997. From Gospel to Gospel: The Function of Isaiah in the New Testament. Pages 651-691 in *Writing and Reading the Scroll of Isaiah: Studies of an Interpretation Tradition*. Edited by Craig C. Broyles and Craig A. Evans. 2 vols. Supplements to Vetus Testamentum 70. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2012. Isaiah 53 in the Letters of Peter, Paul, Hebrews, and John. Pages 145-170 in *The Gospel According to Isaiah 53: Encountering the Suffering Servant in Jewish and Christian Theology*. Edited by Darrell L. Bock and Mitch Glaser. Grand Rapids: Kregel.
- Falk, Daniel K. 1998. *Daily, Sabbath and Festival Prayers in the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 27. Leiden: Brill.
- Farmer, William R. 1998. Reflections on Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins. Pages 260-280 in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa: Trinity Press International.
- Farnell, Lewis Richard. 1896-1909. *The Cults of the Greek States*. 5 vols. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Fee, Gordon D. 1987. *The First Epistle to the Corinthians*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1994. *God's Empowering Presence: The Holy Spirit in the Letters of Paul*. Peabody: Hendrickson.
- Fensham, F. Charles. 1982. *The Books of Ezra and Nehemiah*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Finlan, Stephen. 2004. *The Background and Content of Paul's Cultic Atonement Metaphors*. Academia Biblica 19. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.

- _____. 2005. *Problems with Atonement: The Origins of, and Controversy about, the Atonement Doctrine*. Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical Press.
- _____. 2007. *Option on Atonement in Christian Thought*. Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical Press.
- Fishbane, Michael A. 1985. *Biblical Interpretation in Ancient Israel*. Oxford: Clarendon.
- Fitzmyer, Joseph A. 1967. Further Light on Melchizedek from Qumran Cave 11. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 86. 25-41.
- _____. 1971. *Essays on the Semitic Background of the New Testament*. London: Geoffrey Chapman.
- _____. 1981. *To advance the Gospel: New Testament studies*. New York: Crossroad.
- _____. 1993. *Romans: a new translation with introduction and commentary*. The Anchor Bible 33. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.
- Flint, Peter W. 1997. The Daniel Tradition at Qumran. Pages 41-60 in *Eschatology, Messianism, and the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Edited by Evans, Craig A. and Flint, Peter W. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Frazer, J. G. 1913. *The Golden Bough. VI. The Scapegoat*. 3rd ed. London: Macmillan.
- Fredriksen, Paula. 2010. Judaizing the Nations: The Ritual Demands of Paul's Gospel. *New Testament Studies* 56. 232-252.
- Freedman, David Noel and David Miano. 2003. People of the New Covenant. Pages 7-26 in *The Concept of the Covenant in the Second Temple Period*. Supplements to the Journal of the Study of Judaism 71. Edited by Stanley E. Porter and Jacqueline C. R. de Roo. Leiden: Brill.

Fretheim, Terence E. 1984. *The Suffering of God: An Old Testament Perspective*. Philadelphia: Fortress.

_____. 1994. Genesis: introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 319-674 in vol. 1 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.

Frey, Jörg. 2014. Paul's View of the Spirit in the Light of Qumran. Pages 237-260 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls and Pauline Literature*. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah. Edited by Jean-Sébastien Rey. Leiden: Brill.

Frymer-Kensky, Tikva. 1983. Pollution, Purification, and Purgation in Biblical Israel. Pages 399-414 in *The Word of the Lord Shall Go Forth: Essays in Honor of David Noel Freedman in Celebration of his Sixtieth Birthday*. Edited by Carol L. Meyers and M. O'Connor. Winona Lake, In.: Eisenbrauns.

Furnish, Victor Paul. 1984. *II Corinthians*. Anchor Bible 32A. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.

Gane, Roy E. 2004. *Leviticus, Numbers*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

_____. 2005. *Cult and Character: Purification Offerings, Day of Atonement, and Theodicy*. Winona Lake: Eisenbruns.

Garland, David E. 1999. *2 Corinthians*. The New American Commentary 29. Nashville, Tenn.: Broadman & Holman.

_____. 2003. *1 Corinthians*. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.

García Martínez, Florentino. 2014. Galatians 3:10–14 in the Light of Qumran. Pages 51–67 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls and Pauline Literature*. Edited by Jean-Sébastien Ray. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 102. Leiden: Brill.

Garlington, Don. 1997. Role Reversal and Paul's Use of Scripture in Galatians 3.10-13. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 65. 85-121.

- _____. 2007. *An Exposition of Galatians: A reading from the New Perspective*. 3d. ed. Eugene, Ore.: Wipf and Stock Publishers.
- Gärtner, Bertil. 1965. *The Temple and the Community in Qumran and the New Testament: A Comparative Study in the Temple Symbolism of the Qumran Texts and the New Testament*. Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Gathercole, Simon J. 2002. *Where Is Boasting?: Early Jewish Soteriology and Paul's Response in Romans 1–5*. Eerdmans: Grand Rapids.
- _____. 2004. Justified by Faith by his Blood: The Evidence of Romans 3:21–4:25. Pages 147-184 in *Justification and Variegated Nomism Volume II: The Paradox of Paul*. Edited by D. A. Carson, Peter T. O'Brien, and Mark A. Seifrid. Wissenschaftlich Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 181. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Geller, Stephen A. 1992. Blood Cult: Toward a Literary Theology of the Priestly Work of the Pentateuch. *Prooftexts* 12. 97-124.
- Gerstenberger, Erhard S. 1996. *Leviticus: A Commentary*. Translated by Douglas W. Stott. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- Gese, Hartmut. 1981. *Essays on Biblical Theology*. Translated by Keith Crim. Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House.
- Gignilliat, Mark. 2007. *Paul and Isaiah's Servants: Paul's Theological Reading of Isaiah 40-66 in 2 Corinthians 5.14-6.10*. Library of New Testament Studies 330. London: T & T Clark.
- Gilders, William K. 2004. *Blood Ritual in the Hebrew Bible: Meaning and Power*. Baltimore, Md.; London: The Johns Hopkins University Press.

- _____. 2012. The Day of Atonement in the Dead Sea Scrolls. Pages 63-73 in *The Day of Atonement: Its Interpretations in Early Jewish and Christian Traditions*. Themes in Biblical Narrative: Jewish and Christian Traditions 15. Edited by Thomas Hieke and Tobias Nicklas. Leiden: Brill.
- Goldingay, John. 1989. *Daniel*. Word Biblical Commentary 30. Dallas, Tex.: Word Books.
- _____. 1994. 'You are Abraham's offspring, my friend': Abraham in Isaiah 41. Pages 29-54 in *He Swore an Oath: Biblical Themes from Genesis 12–50*. Edited by Richard S. Hess, Gordon J. Wenham, and Philip E. Satterthwaite. Cambridge: Tyndale House.
- _____. 2001. *Isaiah*. New International biblical commentary. Old Testament series 13. Peabody, Ma.: Hendrickson.
- Goldingay, John and David Payne. 2005. *A critical and Exegetical Commentary on Isaiah 40–55*. 2 vols. London: T & T Clark.
- Goodrich, John K. 2010. Guardians, not Taskmasters: The Cultural Resonances of Paul's Metaphor in Galatians 4.1–2. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 32. 251-284.
- Goppelt, Leonhard. 1982. *Typos: The Typological Interpretation of the Old Testament in the New*. Translated by Donald H. Madvig. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Goudoever, J. van. 1961. *Biblical Calendars*. 2nd rev. ed. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- Grabbe, Lester L. 1997. The Seventy-Weeks Prophecy (Daniel 9:24–27) in Early Jewish Interpretation. Pages 595-611 in *The Quest for Context and Meaning: Studies in Biblical Intertextuality in Honor of James A. Sanders*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and Shemaryahu Talmon. Leiden: Brill.
- Gray, George Buchanan. 1925. *Sacrifice in the Old Testament*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Grosheide, F. W. 1953. *Commentary on the First Epistle to the Corinthians: The English Text with Introduction, Exposition and Notes*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Grudem, Wayne. 1994. *Systematic Theology: An Introduction to Biblical Doctrine*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

Grundmann, Walter. 1968. The Teacher of Righteousness of Qumran and the question of justification by faith in the theology of the Apostle Paul. Pages 85-114 in *Paul and Qumran: Studies in New Testament Exegesis*. Edited by Jerome Murphy-O'Connor. London: Geoffrey Chapman.

Haacker, Klaus. 2003. *The Theology of Paul's Letter to the Romans*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Hafemann, Scott J. 1995. *Paul, Moses, and the History of Israel: The Letter/Spirit Contrast and the Argument from Scripture in 2 Corinthians 3*. Tübingen. Mohr.

_____. 1996. The "Temple of the Spirit" as the Inaugural Fulfillment of the New Covenant within the Corinthian Correspondence. *Ex Auditu* 12. 29-42.

_____. 1997. Paul and the Exile of Israel in Galatians 3–4. Pages 329-371 in *Exile: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Conceptions*. Edited by James M. Scott. Supplements to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 56. Leiden: Brill.

_____. 1998. The Salvation of Israel in Romans 11:25–32: A Response to Krister Stendahl. *Ex Auditu* 4. 38-58.

_____. 2000. *2 Corinthians*. The NIV Application Commentary 32. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

Hahn, Scott W. 2005. Covenant, Oath, and the Aqedah: Διαθήκη in Galatians 3:15–18. *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 67. 79-100.

- _____. 2009. *Kinship by Covenant: A Canonical Approach to the Fulfillment of God's Saving Promises*. New Haven: Yale University Press.
- Hanson, Anthony Tyrrell. 1957. *The Wrath of the Lamb*. London: SPCK.
- Hanson, Paul D. 1977. Rebellion in Heaven: Azazel and Euhemeristic Heroes in Enoch 6–11. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 96/2. 195-233.
- Haran, Menahem. 1978. *Temples and Temple-Service in Ancient Israel: An Inquiry into the Character of Cult Phenomena and the Historical Setting of the Priestly School*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Harmon, Matthew S. 2010. *She Must and Shall Go Free: Paul's Isaianic Gospel in Galatians*. Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die neutestamentliche Wissenschaft; Bd. 186. Berlin; New York: De Gruyter.
- Harrington, Hannah K. 1993. *The Impurity System of Qumran and Rabbis: Biblical Foundations*. Atlanta, Ga.: Scholars Press.
- _____. 2001. *Holiness: Rabbinic Judaism and the Greco-Roman world*. London: Routledge.
- _____. 2004. *The Purity Texts*. Companion to the Qumran Scrolls 5. London: T & T Clark International.
- Hartley, John E. 1992. *Leviticus*. Word Biblical Commentary 4. Nashville, Tn.: Thomas Nelson.
- Hayes, Christine Elizabeth. 2002. *Gentile impurities and Jewish identities: intermarriage and conversion from the Bible to the Talmud*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Hays, Richard B. 1989. *Echoes of Scripture in the Letters of Paul*. New Haven: Yale University Press.
- _____. 1997. *First Corinthians*. Louisville. John Knox Press.

- _____. 1998. "Who Has Believed Our Message?" Paul's Reading of Isaiah. *Society of Biblical Literature: 1998 Seminar Paper: Part One*. 205-225
- _____. 2000. The Letter to the Galatians: Introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 181-348 in vol. 11 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.
- _____. 2002 [1983]. *The Faith of Jesus Christ: The Narrative Substructure of Galatians 3:1-4:11*. 2d ed. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2005. *The Conversion of the Imagination: Paul as Interpreter of Israel's Scripture*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Hayward, C. T. R. 1996. *The Jewish Temple: A non-biblical sourcebook*. London and New York: Routledge.
- Hayward, Robert. 2003. The Sanctification of Time in the Second Temple Period: Case Studies in the Septuagint and Jubilees. Pages in 141-167 in *Holiness Past and Present*. Edited by Stephen C. Barton. London: T & T Clark.
- Hengel, Martin. 1974. *Judaism and Hellenism: studies in their encounter in Palestine during the Early Hellenistic Period*. Translated by John Bowden. London: SCM.
- _____. 1981. *The Atonement: The Origin of the Doctrine in the New Testament*. Translated by John Bowden. London: SCM.
- _____. 2004. The Effective History of Isaiah 53 in the Pre-Christian Period. (with the collaboration of Daniel P. Bailey) Pages 75-146 in *The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Source*. Edited by Bernd Janowski and Peter Stuhlmacher. Translated by Daniel P. Bailey. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

- Hickling, C. J. A. 1980. Paul's Reading of Isaiah. *Pages 215-223 in Studia Biblica 1978: III. Papers on Paul and other New Testament authors: Sixth International Congress on Biblical Studies, Oxford 3-7 April 1978. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 3.* Edited by E.A. Livingstone. Sheffield: JSOT Press.
- Hicks, F. C. N. 1946. *The Fullness of Sacrifice: An Essay in Reconciliation.* London: SPCK.
- Hill, David. 1967. *Greek Words and Hebrew Meanings: Studies in the semantics of soteriological terms.* Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series 5. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Hoffmann, David. 1905-1906. *Das Buch Leviticus.* 2 vols. Berlin: Verlag von M. Poppelauer.
- Hofius, Otfried. 1980. Erwägungen zur Gestalt und Herkunft des paulinischen Versöhnungsgedankens. *Zeitschrift für Theologie und kirche* 77. 186-199.
- _____. 1989. *Paulusstudien.* Wissenschaftlich Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 51. Tübingen: J. C. B. Mohr.
- _____. 2004. The Fourth Servant Song in the New Testament Letters. Pages 163-188 in *The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Source.* Edited by Bernd Janowski and Peter Stuhlmacher. Translated by Daniel P. Bailey. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Hogeterp, Albert L. A. 2006. *Paul and God's Temple.* Biblical Tools and Studies 2. Leuven: Peeters.
- Hood, Jason B. 2009. The Cross in the New Testament: Two theses in conversation with recent literature. *Westminster Theological Journal* 71. 281-95.
- Hooker, Morna D. 1959. *Jesus and the Servant: the influence of the servant concept of Deutero-Isaiah in the New Testament.* London: SPCK.

- _____. 1971. Interchange in Christ. *Journal of Theological Studies* 22. 349-361.
- _____. 1994. *Not Ashamed of the Gospel: New Testament Interpretations of the Death of Christ*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1998. Did the Use of Isaiah 53 to Interpret His Mission Begin with Jesus? Pages 88-103 in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa: Trinity Press International.
- _____. 2008. On Becoming the Righteousness of God: Another Look at 2 Cor 5:21. *Novum Testamentum* 50. 358-37
- Horsley, Richard. 1987. *Jesus and the Spiral of Violence: Popular Jewish Resistance in Roman Palestine*. San Francisco: Harper & Row.
- Janowski, Bernd. 2004. He Bore Our Sins: Isaiah 53 and the Drama of Taking Another's Place. Pages 48-74 in *The Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 in Jewish and Christian Source*. Edited by Bernd Janowski and Peter Stuhlmacher. Translated by Daniel P. Bailey. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Jenson, Philip Peter. 1992. *Graded Holiness: A Key to the Priestly Conception of the World*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 106. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- Jeremias, Joachim. 1967. "παῖς θεοῦ." Pages 677-717 in vol. 5 of *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. Edited by Gerhard Friedrich. Translated and Edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1977. *The Eucharistic Words of Jesus*. London: SCM.
- Jobes, Karen H. 1993. Jerusalem our Mother: Metalepsis and Intertextuality in Galatians 4:21-31. *Westminster Theological Journal* 55. 299-320.

- Jonge, M. de and A. S. van der Woude. 1966. 11Q Melchizedek and the New Testament. *New Testament Studies* 12. 301-326.
- Kahl, Brigitte. 2004. Hagar between Genesis and Galatians: The Story Road to Freedom. Pages 219-232 in *From Prophecy to Testament: The Function of the Old Testament in the New*. Edited by Craig A. Evans. Peabody: Hendrickson.
- Kaiser, Walter C. 2012. The Identity and Mission of the “Servant of the Lord”. Pages 87-107 in *The Gospel According to Isaiah 53: Encountering the Suffering Servant in Jewish and Christian Theology*. Edited by Darrell L. Bock and Mitch Glaser. Grand Rapids: Kregel.
- Kalimi, Isaac. 2012. The Day of Atonement in the Late Second Temple Period. Sadducees’ High Priests, Pharisees’ Norms, and Qumranites’ Calendar(s). Pages 75-96 in *The Day of Atonement: Its Interpretations in Early Jewish and Christian Traditions*. Themes in Biblical Narrative: Jewish Christian Traditions 15. Edited by Thomas Hieke and Tobias Nicklas. Leiden: Brill.
- Kaminsky, Joel S. 1995. *Corporate Responsibility in the Hebrew Bible*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 196. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- Käsemann, Ernst. 1963. *Essays on New Testament Themes*. Translated by W. J. Montague. London: SCM.
- _____. 1964. *Exegetische Versuche und Besinnungen*. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- _____. 1969. *New Testament Questions of Today*. Translated by W. J. Montague and Wilfred F. Bunge. London: SCM.
- _____. 1971a. *Perspectives on Paul*. Translated by Margaret Kohl. London: SCM.

- _____. 1971b. Some Thoughts on the Theme 'The Doctrine of Reconciliation in the New Testament'. Pages 49-64 in *The Future of Our Religious Past: Essays in Honour of Rudolf Bultmann*. Edited by James M. Robinson. Translated by Charles E. Carlston and Robert P. Scharlemann. London: SCM.
- _____. 1973. *An die Röman*. Handbuch zum Neuen Testament 8a. Tübingen: Mohr.
- _____. 1980. *Commentary on Romans*. Translated by Geoffrey W. Bromiley, London: SCM.
- Keener, Craig S. 2005. *1–2 Corinthians*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Keerigan, Alexander. 1963. Echoes of Themes from the Servant Songs in Pauline Theology. Pages 217-228 in *Studiorum Paulinorum Congressus Internationalis Catholicus 1961: simul Secundus Congressus Catholicus de Re Biblica: completo undevicesimo saeculo post S. Pauli in urbem adventum*. Romae: E Pontificio Instituto Biblico.
- Keesmaat, Sylvia C. 1994. Exodus and the Intertextual Transformation of Tradition in Romans 8:14-30. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 54. 29-56.
- _____. 1997. Paul and his Story: Exodus and Tradition in Galatians. Pages 300-333 in *Early Christian Interpretation of the Scriptures of Israel: Investigations and Proposals*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and James A. Sanders. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series* 148. *Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity* 5. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- _____. 1999. *Paul and his Story: (Re)Interpreting the Exodus Tradition*. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament: Supplement Series* 181. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- Kertelge, K. 1990. "δικαιοσύνη." Pages 325-330 in vol.1 of Balz, Horst and Gerhard Schneider. ed. *Exegetical Dictionary of the New Testament*. 3 vols. Edited by Horst Balz and Gerhard Schneider. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Kim, Seyoon. 2002. *Paul and the New Perspective: Second Thoughts on 'The Origin of Paul's Gospel'*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Kiuchi, N. 1987. *The Purification Offering in the Priestly Literature: Its Meaning and Function*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 56. Sheffield: JSOT Press.

_____. 2007. *Leviticus*. Apollos Old Testament Commentary 3. Nottingham: Apollos.

Klauck, Hans-Josef. 1989. 4. *Makkabäerbuch*. Jüdische Schriften aus hellenistisch-römischer Zeit. Band III Lieferung 6. Gütersloh: Mohn.

Klawans, Jonathan. 1995. Notions of Gentile Impurity in Ancient Judaism. *Association of Jewish Studies Review* 20. 285-312.

_____. 2000. *Impurity and Sin in Ancient Judaism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

_____. 2006. *Purity, Sacrifice, and the Temple: Symbolism and Supersessionism in the Study of Ancient Judaism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Knibb, Michael A. 1976. The Exile in the Literature of the Intertestamental Period. *The Heythrop Journal* 17. 253-272.

_____. 2009. *Essays on the Book of Enoch and Other Early Jewish Texts and Traditions*. Studia in Veteris Testamenti Pseudepigrapha 22. Leiden: Brill.

Knight, George A. F. 1984. *Servant Theology: A Commentary on the Book of Isaiah 40-55*. Edinburgh: The Handsel Press.

Koch, Dietrich-Alex. 1986. *Die Schrift als Zeuge des Evangeliums: Untersuchungen zur Verwendung und zum Verständnis der Schrift bei Paulus*. Beiträge zur historischen Theologie 69. Tübingen: Mohr.

Koch, Klaus. 1966. Sühne und sündenvergebung um die Wende von der exilischen zur nachexilischen Zeit. *Evangelische Theologie* 26. 217-239.

- _____. 1972. *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*. Translated by Margaret Kohl. Studies in Biblical Theology Second Series 22. London: SCM.
- Koole, Jan L. 1997-2001. *Isaiah. Part 3*. 3 vols. Translated by Antony P. Runia. Leuven: Peeters.
- Kraus, Wolfgang. 1991. Der Jom Kippur, der Tod Jesu und die >>Biblishe Theologie<<: Ein Versuch, die jüdische Tradition in die Auslegung von Röm 3, 25f einzubeziehen. *Jahrbuch für Biblische Theologie* 6. 155-172.
- Kuhn, Heinz-Wolfgang. 1992. The Impact of the Qumran Scrolls on the Understanding of Paul. Pages 327-339 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Forty Years of Research*. Edited by Devorah Dimant and Uriel Rappaport. Studies on the Text of the Desert of Judah 10. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- Lambrecht, Jan. 1989. The Favorable Time: A Study of 2 Cor 6, 2a in Its Context. Pages in 377-391 in *Vom Urchristentum zu Jesus: für Joachim Gnllka*. Herausgegeben von Hubert Frankemölle und Karl Kertelge. Freiburg : Herder.
- Lane, William L. 1982. Covenant: The Key to Paul's Conflict with Corinth. *Tyndale Bulletin* 33. 3-29.
- Lang, Mainz. 1995. "kipper". Pages 288-303 in vol. 7 of *Theological Dictionary of the Old Testament*. 10 vols. Edited by G. Johannes Botterweck and Helmer Ringgren. Translated by and Edited by David E. Green. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Lee, Chee-Chiew. 2013. *The Blessing of Abraham, the Spirit, and Justification in Galatians: Their Relationship and Significance for Understanding Paul's Theology*. Eugene, Oregon: Pickwick.
- Levine, Baruch A. 1974. *In the Presence of the Lord: A Study of Cult and Some Cultic Terms in Ancient Israel*. Studies in Judaism in Late Antiquity 5. Leiden: E. J. Brill.

- _____. 1989. *The JPS Torah Commentary: Leviticus: The Traditional Hebrew Text with the New JPS Translation*. Philadelphia: The Jewish Publication Society.
- _____. 1993-2000. *Numbers*. Anchor Bible 4-4A. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.
- Lightfoot, J. B. 1902. *Saint Paul's Epistle to the Galatians: A Revised Text with Introduction, Notes, and Dissertations*. London: Macmillan.
- Lim, Kar Yong. 2009. 'The sufferings of Christ are abundant in us' (2 Corinthians 1.5): *A Narrative Dynamics Investigation of Paul's Sufferings in 2 Corinthians*. Library of New Testament Studies 399. London: T & T Clark International.
- Lim, Timothy H. 1997. *Holy Scripture in the Qumran Commentaries and Pauline Letters*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Lincicum, David. 2010. *Paul and the Early Jewish Encounter with Deuteronomy*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 284. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Lohse, Eduard. 1963. *Märtyrer und Gottesknecht: Untersuchungen zur urchristlichen Verkündigung vom Sühntod Jesu Christi*. Forschungen zur Religion und Literatur des Alten und Neuen Testaments. Neue Folge 46. Heft. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- Longenecker, Bruce W. 1998. *The Triumph of Abraham's God: The Transformation of Identity in Galatians*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 2002. Sharing in Their Spiritual Blessings? The Stories of Israel in Galatians and Romans. Pages 58-84 in *Narrative Dynamics in Paul: A Critical Assessment*. Edited by Bruce W. Longenecker. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- _____. 2012. Salvation History in Galatians and the Making of a Pauline Discourse. *Journal for the Study of Paul and his Letters*. 2.2. 65-87.

- Longenecker, Richard N. 1975. *Biblical Exegesis in the Apostolic Period*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1990. *Galatians*. Word Biblical Commentary 41. Dallas: Word.
- _____. 1999. The Focus of Romans: The Central Role of 5:1–8:39 in the Argument of the Letter. Pages 49-69 in *Romans and the People of God*. Edited by Sven K. Soderlund and N. T. Wright. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Macaskill, Grant. 2013. *Union with Christ in the New Testament*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Macchia, Frank D. 2010. *Justified in the Spirit: Creation, Redemption, and the Triune God*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Maccoby, Hyam. 1999. *Ritual and morality: the ritual purity system and its place in Judaism*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Manson, T. W. 1945. ΙΑΑΣΤΗΡΙΟΝ. *Journal of Theological Studies* 46. 1-10.
- Marshall, I. Howard. 1980. *Last Supper and Lord's Supper*. Grand Rapids. Eerdmans.
- Martin, Ralph P. 1967. *Carmen Christi: Philippians ii. 5-11 in recent interpretation and in the setting of early Christian worship*. Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series 4. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- _____. 1981. *Reconciliation: A study of Paul's theology*. Atlanta: John Knox Press.
- _____. 1986. *2 Corinthians*. Word Biblical Commentary 40. Waco: Word Books.
- Martínez, Florentino García. 2014. Galatians 3:10–14 in the Light of Qumran. Pages 51-67 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls and Pauline Literature*. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah. Edited by Jean-Sébastien Rey. Leiden: Brill.

- Martyn, J. Louis. 1985. Apocalyptic Antinomies in Paul's Letter to the Galatians. *New Testament Studies* 31. 410-424.
- _____. 1991. *Events in Galatians: Modified Covenantal Nomism versus God's Invasion of the Cosmos in the Singular Gospel: A Response to J. D. G. Dunn and B. R. Gaventa*. Pages 160-179. *Pauline Theology Volume I: Thessalonians, Philippians, Galatians, Philemon*. Edited by Jouette M. Bassler. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 1997a. *Theological issues in the letters of Paul*. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- _____. 1997b. *Galatians: a new translation with introduction and commentary*. The Anchor Bible 33A. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.
- Matera, Frank J. 1992. *Galatians* Sacra Pagina Series 9. Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical Press.
- _____. 2003. *II Corinthians: A Commentary*. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- McCarthy, Dennis J. 1969. The Symbolism of Blood and Sacrifice. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88. 166-76.
- McGrath, Alister E. 2007 [1993]. *Christian theology: An Introduction*. 4th ed. Oxford: Blackwell.
- McKelvey, R. J. 1969. *The new Temple: the Church in the New Testament*. London: Oxford University Press.
- McKnight, Scot. 1995. *Galatians*. The NIV Application commentary 33. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.
- McLay, Tim. 2003. *The use of the Septuagint in New Testament research*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

- McLean, B. Hudson. 1996. *The Cursed Christ: Mediterranean Expulsion Rituals and Pauline Soteriology*. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 126. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- Mettinger, T. N. D. 1983. *A Farewell to the Servant Songs: a critical examination of an exegetical axiom*. translated by Frederick H. Cryer. Scripta Minora Regiae Societatis Humaniorum Litterarum Lundensis 1982-1983:3. Lund: Gleerup.
- _____. 1997. In Search of the Hidden Structure: YHWH as King in Isaiah 40–55. Pages 143-154 in *Writing and Reading the Scroll of Isaiah: Studies of an Interpretive Tradition*. 2 vols. Edited by Craig C. Broyles and Craig A. Evans. Leiden: Brill.
- Metzger, Bruce M. 1971. *A Textual Commentary on the Greek New Testament*. London; New York: United Bible Societies.
- Meyer, Jason C. 2009. *The End of the Law: Mosaic Covenant in Pauline Theology*. Nac Studies in Bible & Theology 6. Edited by E. Ray Clendenen. B & H Academic: Tennessee.
- Milgrom, Jacob. 1976a. Israel's Sanctuary: The Priestly <<Picture of Dorian Gray>>. *Revue Biblique* 83. 390-399.
- _____. 1976b. *Cult and Conscience: The Asham and the Priestly Doctrine of Repentance*. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 1990. *Numbers: The Traditional Hebrew Text with the New JPS Translation*. Philadelphia: The Jewish Publication Society.
- _____. 1991-2001. *Leviticus*. 3 vols. Anchor Bible 3-3B. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday.
- _____. 2004. *Leviticus: A Book of Ritual and Ethics*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- Miller, Merrill P. 1969. The Function of Isa 61:1–2 in 11Q Melchizedek. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88. 467-469.

Miner, Daniel F. 1971. A Suggested Reading for 11Q Melchizedek 17. *Journal for the Study of Judaism in the Persian, Hellenistic, and Roman Periods* 17. 144-148.

Moffitt, David M. 2011. *Atonement and the Logic of Resurrection in the Epistle to the Hebrews*. Leiden: Brill.

_____. 2013. Further Reflections on Hebrews, Sacrifice, and Purity. Paper presented at ETS National Meeting, Baltimore, Md. November 21.

_____. 2014. Perseverance, Purity, and Identity: Exploring Hebrews' Eschatological Worldview, Ethics, and In-Group. Pages 357-381 in *Sensitivity towards Outsiders: Exploring the Dynamic Relationship between Mission and Ethics in the New Testament and Early Christianity*. Edited by Jacobus (Kobus) Kok, Tobias Nicklas, Dieter T. Roth and Christopher M. Hays. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

Moo, Douglas J. 1996. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

_____. 2000. *Romans*. The NIV Application Commentary 30. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

_____. 2013. *Galatians*. Baker Exegetical Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.

Moore-Crispin, Derek R. 1989. Galatians 4:1–9: The Use and Abuse of Parallels. *Evangelical Quarterly* 60. 203-223.

Morales, Rodrigo J. 2009. The Word of the Luminaries, the Curse of the Law, and the Outpouring of the Spirit in Gal 3,10–14. *Zeitschrift für die neutestamentliche Wissenschaft und die Kunde der älteren Kirche* 2009. 269-277.

_____. 2010. *The Spirit and the Restoration of Israel*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

- Morland, Kjell Arne. 1995. *The Rhetoric of Curse in Galatians*. Emory Studies in Early Christianity 5. Atlanta: Scholars Press.
- Morris, Leon. 1955. *The Apostolic Preaching of the Cross*. London: The Tyndale Press.
- _____. 1956. The meaning of 'ΙΛΑΣΤΗΡΙΟΝ in Romans III. 25. *New Testament Studies* 2. 33-43.
- _____. 1965. *The Cross in the New Testament*. Devon: Paternoster.
- _____. 1985. *1 Corinthians*. 2d ed. Tyndale New Testament Commentary 7. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press.
- _____. 1988. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Eerdmans: Grand Rapids.
- Najman, Hindy. 2010. *Past Renewals: Interpretative Authority, Renewed Revelation and the Quest for Perfection in Jewish Antiquity*. Supplements to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 53. Leiden: Brill.
- Neusner, Jacob. 1973. *The Idea of Purity in Ancient Judaism: From the First Century to the Seventh Century*. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- _____. 1993. *Judaic Law from Jesus to the Mishnah: A Systematic Reply to Professor E. P. Sanders*. South Florida Studies in the History of Judaism 84. Atlanta: Scholars Press.
- Newton, Michael. 1985. *The Concept of Purity at Qumran and in the Letters of Paul*. Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series 53. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Nickelsburg, George W. E. 1983. Reading the Hebrew Scriptures in the First Century: Christian Interpretations in Their Jewish Context. *Word and World* 3. 238-250.

- Nir, Rivka. 2003. *The Destruction of Jerusalem and the Idea of Redemption in the Syriac Apocalypse of Baruch*. Early Judaism and Its Literature 20. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.
- Nitzan, Bilhah. 1994. *Qumran Prayer and Religious Poetry*. Translated by Jonathan Chipman. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 12. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- North, Robert. 2000. *The Biblical Jubilee ... after fifty years*. Analecta Biblica 145. Roma: Editrice Pontificio Istituto Biblico.
- Olyan, Saul M. 2011. *Social Inequity in the World of the Text: The Significance of Ritual and Social Distinctions in the Hebrew Bible*. Journal of Ancient Judaism Supplements 4. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- Osten-Sacken, Peter von der. 1975. *Römer 8 als Beispiel paulinischer Soteriologie*. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- Oswalt, John N. 1998. *The Book of Isaiah: Chapters 40-66*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2003. *Isaiah*. The NIV Application Commentary 17. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.
- Paget, James Carleton. 1994. *The Epistle to Barnabas*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 64. Tübingen : Mohr Siebeck.
- _____. 1996. Paul and the Epistle of Barnabas. *Novum Testamentum* 38. 359-381.
- Pao, David W. 2000. *Acts and the Isaianic New Exodus*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 130. Tübingen : Mohr Siebeck.
- Penna, Romano. 1996. *Paul the Apostle*. 2 vols. Translated by Thomas P. Wahl. Collegeville, Minn.; Liturgical.

- Philip, Finny. 2005. *The Origins of Pauline Pneumatology: The Eschatological Bestowal of the Spirit upon Gentiles in Judaism and in the Early Development of Paul's Theology*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 194. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Piper, Otto A. 1957. Unchanging Promises: Exodus in the New Testament. *Interpretation* 11. 3-22.
- Pitre, Brant. 2011. *Jesus and the Jewish Roots of the Eucharist: Unlocking the Secrets of the Last Supper*. New York: Doubleday.
- Plummer, Alfred. 1915. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Second Epistle of St Paul to the Corinthians*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.
- Porter, Stanley E. 1997. The Use of Old Testament in the New Testament: A Brief Comment on Method and Terminology. Pages 79-96 in *Early Christian Interpretation of the Scriptures of Israel: Investigations and Proposals*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and James A. Sanders. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 148. Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity 5. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- _____. 2003. The Concept of Covenant in Paul. Pages 269-285 in *The Concept of the Covenant in the Second Temple Period*. Supplements to the Journal of the Study of Judaism 71. Edited by Stanley E. Porter and Jacqueline C. R. de Roo. Leiden: Brill.
- Qimron, Elisha. *The Hebrew of the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Atlanta, Ga.: Scholars Press.
- Quell, Gottfried and Johannes Behm. 1964. “διαθήκη.” Pages 106-134 in vol. 2 of *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. Edited by G. Kittel. Translated and Edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Rainbow, Paul. 1997. Melchizedek as a Messiah at Qumran. *Bulletin for Biblical Research* 7. 179-194.

Räisänen, Heikki. 1983. *Paul and the law*. Tübingen: Mohr.

_____. 1985. Galatians 2.16 and Paul's break with Judaism. *New Testament Studies* 31. 543-553.

Reicke, Bo. 1968. Paul's understanding of Righteousness. Pages 37-49 in *Soli Deo Gloria: New Testament Studies in Honor of William Childs Robinson*. Edited by J. McDowell Richards. Richmond, Va.: John Knox Press.

Rendtorff, Rolf. 1993. *Canon and Theology: Overtures to an Old Testament Theology*. Translated and edited by Margaret Kohl. Minneapolis: Fortress.

_____. 1998. *The Covenant Formula: An Exegetical and Theological Investigation*. Translated by Margaret Kohl. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.

_____. 2005. *The Canonical Hebrew Bible: A Theology of the Old Testament*. Tools for Biblical Study series 7. Translated by David E. Orton, Leiden: Deo Publishing.

Ridderbos, Herman. 1977. *Paul: An Outline of His Theology*. Translated by John Richard de Witt. London: SPCK.

Riesner, Rainer. 1998. *Paul's Early Period: Christology, Mission Strategy, Theology*. Translated by Doug Stott. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

Rom-Shiloni, Dalit. 2006. Socio-Ideological Setting or Settings for Penitential Prayers? Pages 51-68 in vol. 1 of *Seeking the favor of God: The Origins of Penitential Prayer in Second Temple Judaism*. Edited by Mark J. Boda, Daniel K. Falk, and Rodney A. Werline. Early Judaism and Literature 21. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.

Rosner, Brian S. 2013. *Paul and the Law: Keeping the commandments of God*. New Studies in Biblical Theology 31. Downers Grove: InterVarsity.

Routledge, Robin. 2002. *Passover and Last Supper*. Tyndale Bulletin 53. 203-221.

- Rowley, H. H. 1965. *The Servant of the Lord and other Essays on the Old Testament*. 2nd and rev. ed.; Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Sacchi, Paolo. 1990. *Jewish Apocalyptic and its History*. Translated by William J. Short. Journal for the Study of the Pseudepigrapha Supplement Series 20. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.
- Sampley, J. Paul, 2000. The Second Letter to the Corinthians: Introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 1-180 in Vol. 11 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.
- _____. 2002. The First Letter to the Corinthians: Introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 771-1003 in vol. 10 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.
- Sanders, E. P. 1977. *Paul and Palestinian Judaism: A Comparison of Patterns of Religion*. London: SCM.
- _____. 1983. *Paul, the Law, and the Jewish People*. Philadelphia: Fortress.
- _____. 1985. *Jesus and Judaism*. London: SCM.
- _____. 1990. *Jewish Law from Jesus to the Mishnah: Five Studies*. London: SCM.
- _____. 1992. *Judaism: practice and belief, 63BCE–66CE*. London: SCM.
- _____. 2001. *Paul: a very short Introduction*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Sanders, J. A. 1973. The Old Testament in IIQ Melchizedek. *Journal of the Ancient Near Eastern Society of Columbia University* 5. 373-382.

- Sanders, Jack T. 1971. *The New Testament Christological Hymns: Their Historical Religious Background*. Monograph Series /Society for New Testament Studies 15. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Sanders, Karl Olav. 1991. *Paul – One of the Prophets? : A Contribution to the Apostle's Self-Understanding*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. 2. Reihe 43. Tübingen: Mohr.
- Sapp, David A. 1998. The LXX, 1QIsa, and MT Versions of Isaiah 53 and the Christian Doctrine of Atonement. Pages 170-192. in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa.: Trinity Press International.
- Sawyer, John F. A. 1989. Daughter Zion and Servant of the Lord in Isaiah: A Comparison. *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 44. 89-107.
- Saydon, P. P. 1946. Sin-Offering and Trespass-Offering. *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 8. 393-398.
- Schipper, Jeremy. 2011. *Disability and Isaiah's Suffering Servant*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Schlier, Heinrich. 1977. *Der Römerbrief: Kommentar*. Freiburg; Basel; Wien: Herder.
- Schmid, Hans Heinrich. 1980. Ich will euer Gott sein, und ihr sollt mein Volk sein: Die sogenannte Bundesformel und die Frage nach der Mitte des Alten Testamentes. Pages 1-25 in *Kirche: Festschrift für Günther Bornkamm zum 75. Geburtstag*. Herausgegeben von Dieter Lührmann und Georg Strecker. Tübingen: Mohr.
- Schmidt, Francis. 2001. *How the Temple Think: Identity and Social Cohesion in Ancient Judaism*. Translated by J. Edward Crowley. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press.

- Schnelle, Udo. 2005. *Apostle Paul: His Life and Theology*. Translated by M. Eugene Boring. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.
- Schoeps, H. J. 1961. *Paul: The Theology of the Apostle in the light of Jewish Religious History*. Translated by Harold Knight. London: Lutterworth Press.
- Schrage, Wolfgang. 1980. Ist die Kirche das >>Abbild seines Todes?<< Zu Röm 6,5 Pages 205-219 in *Kirche: Festschrift für Günther Bornkamm zum 75. Geburtstag*. Herausgegeben von Dieter Lührmann und Georg Strecker. Tübingen: Mohr.
- Schreiber, von Stefan. 2006. *Das Weiheschenk Gottes: Eine Deutung des Todes Jesu in Röm 3, 25. Zeitschrift für die Neutestamentliche Wissenschaft und die Kunde der Älteren Kirche* 97. 88-110.
- Schreiner, Thomas R. 1991. 'Works of Law' in Paul. *Novum Testamentum* 33.3. 217-244.
- _____. 1993. *The Law and Its Fulfillment: A Pauline Theology of Law*. Grand Rapids: Baker Books.
- _____. 1998. *Romans*. Baker Exegetical Commentary on the New Testament 6. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.
- _____. 2006. Penal Substitution View. Pages 67-98 in *The Nature of the Atonement: Four Views*. Edited by James Bailby and Paul R. Eddy. Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press.
- _____. 2008. *New Testament Theology: Magnifying God in Christ*. Nottingham: Apollos.
- _____. 2010. *Galatians*. Zondervan: Exegetical Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.

- Schuller, Eileen. 2007. Penitential Prayer in Second Temple Judaism Pages 1-15 in vol. 2 of *Seeking the favor of God: The Development of Penitential Prayer in Second Temple Judaism*. Edited by Mark J. Boda, Daniel K. Falk, and Rodney A. Werline. Early Judaism and Literature 22. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.
- Schwartz, Daniel R. 1983. Two Pauline Allusions to the Redemptive Mechanism of the Crucifixion. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 102. 259-268.
- Scott, James M. 1992. *Adoption as sons of God: an exegetical investigation into the background of [huiiothesia] in the Pauline Corpus*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. 2. Reihe; 48. Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr.
- _____. 1993a. Paul's Use of Deuteronomic Tradition. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 112. 645-665.
- _____. 1993b. 'For as many as are of works of the law are under a curse' (Galatians 3.10). Pages 187-221 in *Paul and the Scriptures of Israel*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and James A. Sanders. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 83: Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity 1. Sheffield: JSOT Press.
- _____. 1994. The Use of Scripture in 2 Corinthians 6.16c-18 and Paul's Restoration Theology. *Journal for the study of the New Testament* 56. 73-99.
- _____. 1998. *2 Corinthians*. New International Biblical Commentary 8. Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson Publishers.
- _____. 2001. "And then all Israel will be saved" (Rom 11:26). Pages 489-527 in *Restoration: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Perspectives*. Edited by James E. Scott. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2005. *On Earth as in Heaven: The Restoration of Sacred Time and Sacred Space in the Book of Jubilees*. Supplement to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 91. Leiden: Brill.

- Scroggs, Robin. 1967. Paul: ΣΟΦΟΣ AND ΠΝΕΥΜΑΤΙΚΟΣ. *New Testament Studies* 14. 33–55.
- Seeligmann, Isac Leo. 1948. *The Septuagint Version of Isaiah: a discussion of its problems*. Leiden: E. J. Brill.
- _____. 2004. *The Septuagint Version of Isaiah and Cognate Studies*. Edited by Robert Hanhart and Hermann Spieckermann. *Forschungen zum Alten Testament* 40. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Segal, J. B. 1963. *The Hebrew Passover: From the Earliest Time to A. D. 70*. London: Oxford University Press.
- Shum, Shin-Lun. 2002. *Paul's Use of Isaiah in Romans*. *Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament* 2. Reihe 156. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Siker, Jeffrey S. 2011. Recombinant Sacrifice in Early Christianity. Pages 65-82 in *Ritual and Metaphor: Sacrifice in the Bible*. Edited by Christian A. Eberhart. *Resources for biblical study* 68. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.
- Silva, Moisés. 2001. Abraham, Faith, and Works: Paul's Use of Scripture in Galatians 3:6–14. *Westminster Theological Journal* 63. 251-267.
- _____. 2004. Faith Versus Works of Law in Galatians. Page 217-248 in *Justification and Variegated Nomism Volume II: The paradoxes of Paul*. Edited by D. A. Carson, Peter T. O'Brien, and Mark A. Seifrid. *Wissenschaftlich Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament*. 2 Reihe. 181. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- _____. 2007. Galatians. Pages 785-812 in *Commentary on the New Testament Use of the Old Testament*. Edited by G. K. Beale and D. A. Carson. Grand Rapids: Baker Academics.
- Sklar, Jay. 2005. *Sin, Impurity, Sacrifice, Atonement: The Priestly Conceptions*. Sheffield: Sheffield Phoenix Press.

- Smart, James D. 1965. *History and Theology in Second Isaiah: A Commentary on Isaiah 35, 40–66*. Philadelphia: Westminster.
- Smith, Barry D. 2006. “Spirit of Holiness” as Eschatological Principle of Obedience. Pages 75-99 in *Christian Beginnings and the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Edited by John J. Collins and Craig A. Evans. Grand Rapids: Baker Academic.
- Smith, Ralph P. 1984. *Micah – Malachi*. Word Biblical Commentary 32. Waco, Tex.: Word.
- Snaith, Norman H. and Harry M. Orlinsky. 1967. *Studies on the second part of the book of Isaiah: The so-called “servant of the Lord” and “suffering servant” in second Isaiah (by Orlinsky): Isaiah 40-66: a study of the teaching of the second Isaiah and its consequences (by Snaith)*. Supplements to Vetus Testamentum 14. Leiden: Brill.
- Soards, Marion L. 1999. *1 Corinthians*. New International Biblical Commentary 7. Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson Publishers.
- Söding, Thomas. 2001. Verheißung und Erfüllung im Lichte paulinischer Theologie. *New Testament Studies* 46. 146-170.
- Stanley, Christopher D. 1992. *Paul and the Language of Scripture: Citation Technique in the Pauline Epistles and Contemporary Literature*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- _____. 2008. Paul’s “Use” of Scripture: Why the Audience matters. Pages 125-155 in *As it is written: Studying Paul’s Use of Scripture*. Edited by Stanley E. Porter and Christopher D. Stanley. Society of Biblical Literature: Symposium Series 50. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature.
- Stanley, D. M. 1954. The Theme of the Servant of Yahweh in Primitive Christian Soteriology, and its Transposition by St. Paul. *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 16. 385-425.
- Stendahl, Krister. 1976. *Paul among Jews and Gentiles and other essays*. Minneapolis: Fortress.

- Stökl Ben Ezra, Daniel. 2003. *The Impact of Yom Kippur on Early Christianity: The Day of Atonement from Second Temple Judaism to the Fifth Century*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. Tübingen: J. C. B. Mohr.
- Stone, Michael E. 1984. Apocalyptic Literature. Pages 383-441 in *Jewish Writings of the Second Temple Period: Apocrypha, Pseudepigrapha, Qumran Sectarian Writings, Philo, Josephus*. Edited by Michael E. Stone. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1984.
- Stowers, Stanley K. 1994. *A Rereading of Romans: Justice, Jews, and Gentiles*. New Haven, London: Yale University Press.
- Stuhlmacher, P. 1989. *Der brief an die Römer*. Das Neue Testament Deutsch: Neues Göttinger Bibelwerk: Teilband 6. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.
- _____. 1994. *Paul's Letter to the Romans: A Commentary*. Translated by S. J. Hafemann. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster/John Knox.
- _____. 2001. *Revisiting Paul's Doctrine of Justification: A Challenge to the New Perspective/ with an essay by Donald A. Hagner*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity.
- Swartley, Willard M. 1994. *Israel's Scripture Traditions and the Synoptic Gospels: Story Shaping Story*. Peabody: Hendrickson.
- Sweeney, Marvin A. 2000. *The Twelve Prophets*. 2 vols. Collegeville, Minn.: The Liturgical Press.
- Taylor, Vincent. 1937. *Jesus and his Sacrifice: A Study of the Passion-Sayings in the Gospels*. London : Macmillan.
- Theissen, Matthew. 2009. Hebrews 12.5–13, the Wilderness Period, and Israel's Discipline. *New Testament Studies* 55. 366-379.

- Thielman, Frank. 1989. *From the Plight to Solution: A Jewish Framework for Understanding Paul's View of the Law in Galatians and Romans*. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 1993. The Story of Israel and the Theology of Romans 5–8. *Society of Biblical Literature: 1993 Seminar Paper*. 227-249.
- _____. 1995. *Paul and the Law: A Contextual Approach*. Downers Grove: IVP Academics.
- Thiselton, Anthony C. 2000. *The First Epistle to the Corinthians: A Commentary on the Greek Text*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Thrall, Margaret E. 1994-2000. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Second Epistle to the Corinthians*. 2 vols. Edinburgh: T & T Clark.
- Tigay, Jeffrey H. 1996. *The JPS Torah Commentary: Deuteronomy: The Traditional Hebrew Text with the New JPS Translation*. Philadelphia: The Jewish Publication Society.
- Tiwald, Markus. 2012. Christ as Hilasterion (Rom 3:25). Pauline Theology on the Day of Atonement in the Mirror of Early Jewish Thought. Pages 189-209 in *The Day of Atonement: Its Interpretations in Early Jewish and Christian Traditions*. Themes in Biblical Narrative: Jewish Christian Traditions 15. Edited by Thomas Hieke and Tobias Nicklas. Leiden: Brill.
- Torrey, Charles Cutler. 1928. *The Second Isaiah: A New Interpretation*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.
- Troxel, Ronald L. 2008. *LXX-Isaiah as Translation and Interpretation: The Strategies of the Translator of the Septuagint of Isaiah*. Supplements to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 124. Leiden: Brill.

- Ulrich, Eugene. 2002. The Absence of 'Sectarian Variants' in Jewish Scriptural Scrolls Found at Qumran. Pages 179-195 in *The Bible as Book: Hebrew Bible and the Judean Desert Discoveries*. Edited by Edward D. Herbert & Emanuel Tov. London: British Library; New Castle, DE: Oak Knoll Press.
- Van Henten, J. W. 1993. The Tradition-Historical Background of Romans 3.25: A Search for Pagan and Jewish Parallels. Pages 102-128 in *From Jesus to John: Essays on Jesus and New Testament Christology in Honour of Marinus de Jonge*. Edited by Martinus C. De Boer. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 84. Sheffield: JSOT.
- _____. 1997. *The Maccabean martyrs as saviours of the Jewish people: a study of 2 and 4 Maccabees*. Leiden; New York : Brill.
- VanderKam, James C. 1997a. *Textual and Historical Studies in the Book of Jubilees*. Harvard Semitic Monographs 14. Missoula, Mont.; Scholars Press.
- _____. 1997b. Exile in Jewish Apocalyptic Literature. Pages 89-109 in *Exile: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Conceptions*. Edited by James M. Scott. Supplements to the Journal for the Study of Judaism 56. Leiden: Brill.
- VanderKam, James C., and Peter Flint. 2002. *The Meaning of the Dead Sea Scrolls: Their Significance for Understanding the Bible, Judaism, Jesus, and Christianity*. London: T & T Clark.
- VanLandingham, Chris. 2006. *Judgment & Justification in Early Judaism and the Apostle Paul*. Peabody: Hendrickson.
- Vaux, Roland de. 1961. *Ancient Israel: Its Life and Institutions*. Translated by John McHugh. London: Darton, Longman & Todd.
- _____. 1964. *Studies in Old Testament Sacrifice*. Cardiff: University of Wales Press.

- Vermes, Geza. 2012. *Christian Beginnings: From Nazareth to Nicaea, AD 30–325*. London: Penguin Books.
- Vogel, Winfried. 2010. *The Cultic Motif in the Book of Daniel*. New York: Peter Lang.
- Vogels, Walter. 1979. *God's universal covenant: a Biblical study*. Ottawa: University of Ottawa Press
- Wagner, J. Ross. 1997. The Christ, Servant of Jew and Gentile: A Fresh approach to Romans 15:8–9. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 116. 473-485.
- _____. 1998. The Heralds of Isaiah and the Messiah of Paul: *An Investigation of Paul's Use of Isaiah 51–55 in Romans*. Pages 193-222. in *Jesus and the Suffering Servant: Isaiah 53 and Christian Origins*. Edited by William H. Bellinger, Jr. and William R. Farmer. Harrisburg, Pa.: Trinity Press International.
- _____. 2002. *Heralds of the Good News: Isaiah and Paul "In Concert" in the Letter to the Romans*. Leiden: Brill.
- _____. 2005. Isaiah in Romans and Galatians. Pages 117-132 in *Isaiah in the New Testament*. Edited by Steve Moyise and Maarten J. J. Menken. London: T & T Clark International.
- Wallace, Daniel B. 1996. *Greek Grammar Beyond the Basic*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan.
- Waters, Guy Prentiss. 2004. *Justification and the New Perspectives on Paul: A Review and Response*. Phillipsburg, Nj.: P & R Publishing.
- _____. 2006. *The End of Deuteronomy in the Epistles of Paul*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 221. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Watson, Francis. 2002. Is There a Story in These Texts? Pages 231-239 in *Narrative Dynamics in Paul: A Critical Assessment*. Edited by Bruce W. Longenecker. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.

- _____. 2004. *Paul and the Hermeneutics of Faith*. London: T & T Clark International.
- _____. 2007. *Paul, Judaism, and the Gentiles: beyond the New Perspective*. Rev. and expanded ed. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Watts, John D. W. 1987. *Isaiah 34–66*. Word Biblical Commentary 25. Waco, Tex.: Word.
- Watts, Rikki E. 1997. *Isaiah's New Exodus and Mark*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 88. Tübingen : Mohr Siebeck.
- _____. 1999. "For I Am Not Ashamed of the Gospel": Romans 1:16–17 and Habakkuk. Pages 3-25 in *Romans and the People of God*. Edited by Sven K. Soderlund and N. T. Wright. Grand Rapids: William Eerdmans.
- _____. 2009. Isaiah in the New Testament. Pages 213-233 in *Interpreting Isaiah: Issues and Approaches*. Edited by David G. Firth and H. G. M. Williamson. Downers Grove, Il.: InterVarsity Press.
- Webb, William J. 1993. *Returning Home: New Covenant and Second Exodus as the Context for 2 Corinthians 6.14–7.1*. Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series 85. Sheffield: JSOT.
- Weinfeld, Moshe. 1970. The Covenant of Grant in the Old Testament and in the Ancient Near East. *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 90. 184-203.
- _____. 1972. *Deuteronomy and the Deuteronomistic School*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Wengst, Klaus. 1973. *Christologische Formeln und Lieder des Urchristentums*. Gütersloh: Mohn.
- Wenham, David. 1995. *Paul: Follower of Jesus or Founder of Christianity?* Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.

- Wenham, Gordon J. 1979. *The Book of Leviticus*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- _____. 1987. *Genesis 1–15*. Word Biblical Commentary 1. Waco, Tex.: Word.
- Wenthe, Dean O. 1974. An Exegetical Study of I Corinthians 5:7b. *Springfielder* 38. 134-140.
- Werline, Rodney Alan. 1988. *Penitential Prayer in Second Temple Judaism: The Development of a Religious Institution*. SBL Early Judaism and Its Literature 13. Atlanta, Ga.: Scholars Press.
- Westerholm, Stephen. 2004. *Perspectives Old and New on Paul: The “Lutheran” Paul and His Critics*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Westermann, Claus. 1969. *Isaiah 40-66: A Commentary*. Translated by David M. G. Stalker. London: SCM.
- Wheaton, Gerald. 2009. The Role of the Jewish Feasts in John’s Gospel. Ph. D. diss., University of St Andrews.
- Whybray, R. N. 1975. *Isaiah 40–66*. London: Olphants.
- _____. 1978. *Thanksgiving for a Liberated Prophet: An Interpretation of Isaiah Chapter 53*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 4. Sheffield: JSOT.
- Wilckens, Ulrich. 1978-1982. *Der Brief an de Römer*. 3vols. Evangelisch-Katholischer Kommentar zum Neuen Testament 6. Zürich: Benziger ; Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag.
- Wilcox, Max. 1979. The Promise of the ‘Seed’ in the New Testament and the Targum. *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 5. 2-20.
- Wilder, William N. 2001. *Echoes of the Exodus Narrative in the Context and Background of Galatians 5:18*. Studies in Biblical literature 23. New York: Peter Lang.

Wilk, Florian. 1998. *Die Bedeutung des Jesajabuches für Paulus*. Forshungen zur Religion und Literatur des Alen und Neuen Testaments 179. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.

Williams, Jarvis J. 2010. *Maccabean Martyr Traditions in Paul's Theology of Atonement: Did Martyr Theology Shape Paul's Conception of Jesus's Death?* Eugene: Wipe & Stock.

Williams, Sam K. 1975. *Jesus' Death as Saving Event: The Background and Origin of a Concept*. Harvard Dissertations in Religion 2. Missoula: Scholars Press.

_____. 1980. The "Righteousness of God" in Romans. *Journal of Biblical Literature* 99. 241-290.

Williamson, Paul R. 2000. *Abraham, Israel and the Nations: The Patriarchal Promise and its Covenant Development in Genesis*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 315. Sheffield: JSOT.

_____. 2007. *Sealed with an Oath: Covenant in God's unfolding purpose*. New Studies in Biblical Theology 23. Downers Grove: InterVarsity.

Willitts, Joel. 2003. Context matters: Paul's use of Leviticus 18:5 in Galatians 3:12. *Tyndale Bulletin* 54. 105-122.

_____. 2005. Isa 54,1 in Gal 4,24b–27: Reading Genesis in Light of Isaiah. *Zeitschrift für die Neutestamentliche Wissenschaft* 96.3. 188-210.

Wilson, Todd A. 2004. Wilderness Apostasy and Paul's Portrayal of the Crisis in Galatians. *New Testament Studies* 50. 550-571.

_____. 2007. *The Curse of the Law and the Crisis in Galatia: Reassessing the Purpose of Galatians*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 225. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.

- Winter, Bruce W. 2001. *After Paul left Corinth: The Influence of Secular Ethics and Social Change*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Wisdom, Jeffrey R. 2001. *Blessing for the Nations and the Curse of the Law: Paul's Citation of Genesis and Deuteronomy in Gal 3.8–10*. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe 133. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck.
- Witherington, Ben, III. 1991. The Influence of Galatians on Hebrews. *New Testament Studies* 37. 146-152.
- _____. 1994. *Paul's Narrative Thought World*. Louisville, Ky.: Westminster John Knox.
- _____. 1995. *Conflict and Community in Corinth: A Socio-Rhetorical Commentary on 1 and 2 Corinthians*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1998. *Grace in Galatia: A Commentary on Paul's Letter to the Galatians*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 2006. *1 and 2 Thessalonians: A Socio-Rhetorical Commentary*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- Wolff, Christian. 1976. *Jeremia im Frühjudentum und Urchristentum*. Texte und Untersuchungen zur Geschichte der altchristlichen Literatur 118. Berlin: Akademie-Verlag.
- Woude, A. van der. 2011. The Comfort of Zion: Personification in Isaiah 40–66. Pages 159-167 in *'Enlarge the Site of Your Tent': The City as Unifying Theme in Isaiah: The Isaiah Workshop – De Jesaja Werkplaats*. Oudtestamentische Studiën 58. Edited by Archibald L. H. M. van Wieringen and Annemarieke van der Woude. Leiden: Brill.
- Wright, David P. 1987. *The Disposal of Impurity: Elimination Rites in the Bible and in Hittite and Mesopotamian Literature*. SBL Dissertation Series 101. Atlanta: Scholars Press.

- _____. 1991. The Spectrum of Priestly Impurity. Pages 150-181 in *Priesthood and Cult in Ancient Israel*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series 125. Edited by David J. A. Clines and Philip R. Davies. Sheffield: JSOT Press.
- Wright, N. T. 1991. *The Climax of the Covenant: Christ and the Law in Pauline Theology*. Edinburgh, T & T Clark.
- _____. 1992. *The New Testament and the People of God*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 1993. On becoming the Righteousness of God: 2 Corinthians 5:21. Pages 200-208 in *Pauline Theology Volume II: 1 & 2 Corinthians*. Edited by David M. Hay. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 1996. *Jesus and the Victory of God*. London: SPCK.
- _____. 1997. *What Saint Paul Really Said*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans.
- _____. 1999. New Exodus, New Inheritance: The Narrative Substructure of Romans 3-8. Pages 26-35 in *Romans and the People of God*. Edited by Sven K. Soderlund and N. T. Wright. Grand Rapids: William Eerdmans.
- _____. 2002. The Letter to the Romans: Introduction, Commentary, and Reflections. Pages 393-770 in vol. 10 of *The New Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by Leander E. Keck. Nashville: Abingdon Press.
- _____. 2005. *Paul: in fresh perspective*. Minneapolis: Fortress.
- _____. 2006. New Perspectives on Paul. Pages 243-64. in *Justification in Perspective*. Edited by Bruce L. McCormack. Grand Rapids: Baker Academics.
- _____. 2009. *Justification: God's Plan and Paul's Vision*. London: SPCK.
- _____. 2013a. *Paul and the Faithfulness of God*. 2 vols. Minneapolis: Fortress.

_____. 2013b. *Pauline Perspectives: Essays on Paul*. Minneapolis: Fortress.

Zenger, Erich. 1987. The God of Exodus in the Message of the Prophets as seen in Isaiah. Pages 22-33 in *Exodus: A Lasting Paradigm*. Concilium 189. Edited by Bas van Iersel and Anton Weiler; English Language Editor Marcus Lefébure. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark.

Zimmerli, W. 1970. Das 'Gnadenjahr des Herrn'. Pages 321-332 in *Archäologie und Altes Testament: Festschrift für Kurt Galling zum 8 Januar 1970*. Edited by A. Kuschke und E. Kutsch. Tübingen: Mohr.

Zimmerli, W. and J. Jeremias. 1965. *The Servant of God*. Rev. ed. London: SCM.